THE SYNOPTIC GOSPELS

ARRANGED IN
PARALLEL COLUMNS

BY

J. M. THOMPSON

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

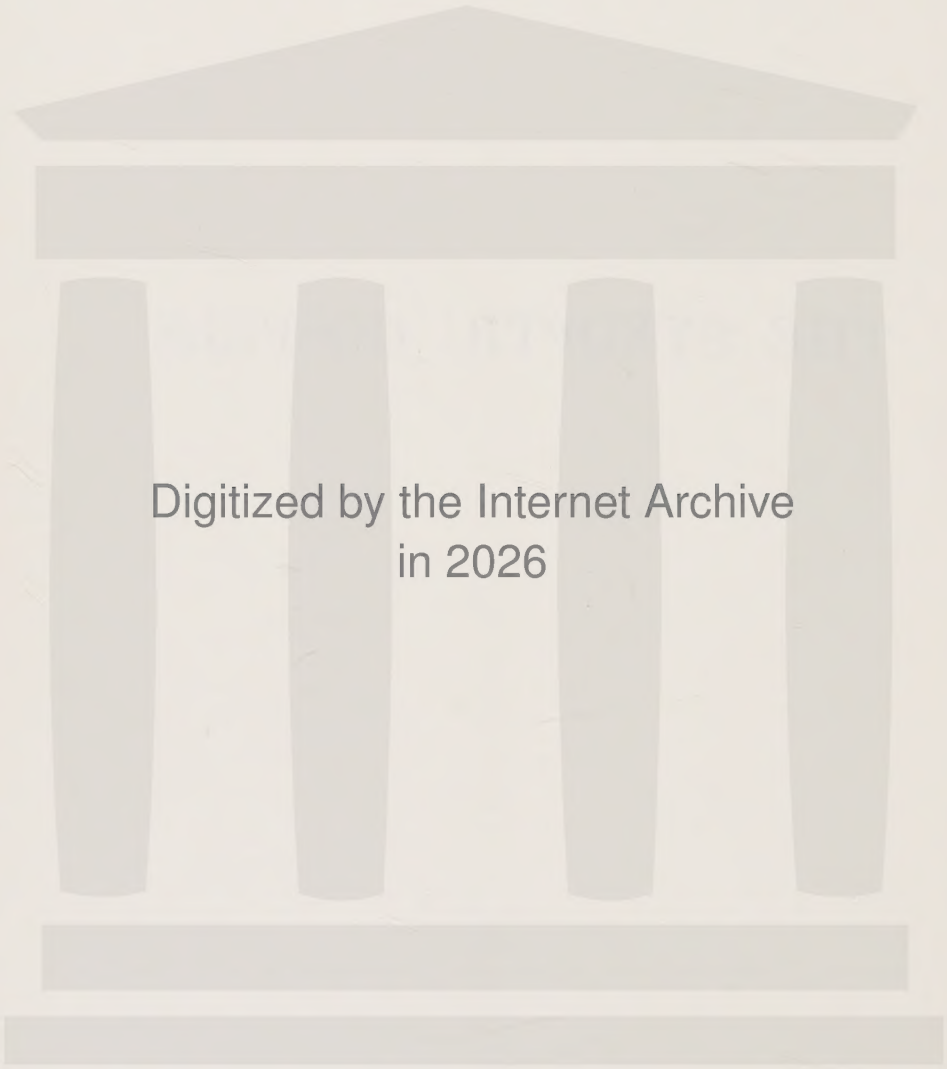
OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

LONDON Amen House, E.C.4
GLASGOW 58 Buchanan Street
NEW YORK 417 Fifth Avenue, N.Y.16
TORONTO 480 University Avenue
MELBOURNE Bowen Crescent
WELLINGTON
Empire Building, Willis Street
BOMBAY Apollo Bunder
CALCUTTA Lal Bazar
MADRAS Mount Road
KARACHI McLeod Road
DACCA 26 Jinnah Avenue
LAHORE Bank Square
KUALA LUMPUR Julan Belanda
HONG KONG The University
CAPE TOWN
Thibault House, Thibault Square
IBADAN Iddo Gate
ACCRA Kwame Nkrumah Avenue
NAIROBI Government Road
SALISBURY Baker Avenue

Price
(in U.K. only)
21s. net

Denise Lloyd

THE SYNOPTIC GOSPELS


Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/synopticgospelsa0000jmth

THE
SYNOPTIC GOSPELS

ARRANGED IN
PARALLEL COLUMNS

BY

J. M. THOMPSON

FELLOW AND DEAN OF DIVINITY, S. MARY MAGDALEN COLLEGE, OXFORD
EXAMINING CHAPLAIN TO THE BISHOP OF GLOUCESTER

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E.C.4

GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MELBOURNE WELLINGTON
BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS KARACHI LAHORE DACCA
CAPE TOWN SALISBURY NAIROBI IBADAN ACCRA
KUALA LUMPUR HONG KONG

FIRST EDITION 1910

REPRINTED PHOTOGRAPHICALLY IN GREAT BRITAIN
BY LOWE & BRYDONE, PRINTERS, LTD., LONDON
FROM SHEETS OF THE FIRST EDITION
1928, 1935, 1943, 1947, 1950, 1956, 1962

PREFACE

MANY arrangements of the Gospels have been designed, in order to illustrate the Synoptic Problem. But I am not aware of any which attempt to do for the English version what such books as Greswell's *Harmonia Evangelica*, Rushbrooke's *Synopticon*, and Wright's valuable *Synopsis* have done for the Greek text—namely, to compare the parallel passages not merely *en masse*, but verse by verse and word by word. That is what I have tried to do in the present work.

Part I contains, in the first column, the whole of Mark, printed consecutively, and arranged in paragraphs according to its subject-matter; in the second column, the parallel passages from Matthew; in the third, the parallel passages from Luke; and in the fourth, some additional parallels and references.

Part II is printed in two columns, the first giving such parts of Matthew as have not already been printed in Part I, and the second the parallel passages from Luke, where there are such.

Part III gives in the first column such parts of Luke as have not been printed in Part I, and in the second the parallel passages from Matthew, where there are any. I have thought it better to print such passages as are common to Matthew and Luke both in Part II and in Part III, rather than to prejudge the question of priority.

Italics are used throughout for such words or verses as are peculiar to any one Gospel. It is of course less easy to carry out this plan in the English version than in the original Greek; but it is hoped that sufficient accuracy has been obtained to justify the attempt.

Quotations from the Old Testament have been printed between inverted commas, and references have been given at the foot of the page.

The text used is that of the Revised Version: the most important marginal readings (marked M) have been added as footnotes.

Three Tables of Contents have been added, which will, it is hoped, simplify the use of the synopsis, and summarize its material.

J. M. T.

NOTE TO CONTENTS

THE object of these Tables is (i) to set out the whole Contents of the Synoptic Gospels in such a way that it may be seen at a glance which parts are independent, which related to one another, and (ii) to provide a detailed index of separate passages with their parallels.

Table I gives on the left-hand page the whole of Mark, section by section, and on the right-hand page the parallel passages in Matthew and Luke, together with a few other references. Passages which are doubtful parallels, or which are printed for convenience of reference only, are enclosed in brackets. In passages marked with an asterisk the order of the verses has been changed in printing.

Thus a comparison of the first and second columns on the right-hand page shows to what extent Mark has been taken over and edited by Matthew and Luke.

Table II gives on the left-hand page the whole of Matthew, section by section, and on the right-hand page (i) in the first column, all such passages or (parts of passages) of Matthew as have already been printed parallel to Mark in Part I: these are not printed again: references are given to the sections where they can be found: (ii) in the second column, passages of Matthew which are parallel to Luke, and which will be found printed again in Part III, in the sections to which references are given: (iii) in the third column, parallel passages from Luke, printed in the present Part II.

Thus the first column gives the parts of Matthew which are dependent upon Mark; the second and third together give a rough outline of 'Q' or its equivalents; and those passages which have no parallels under these columns represent Matthew's original contributions.

Table III deals with Luke in the same way as Table II deals with Matthew. The first column on the right-hand page gives those passages of Luke which have already been printed parallel to Mark in Part I, the second gives those which have already been printed parallel to Matthew in Part II, and the third gives those passages of Matthew which are printed parallel to Luke in the present Part III.

Thus the first column gives the parts of Luke that are dependent on Mark; the second and third together give a rough outline of 'Q' or its equivalents; and those passages which have no parallels under these columns represent Luke's original contributions.

CONTENTS OF PART I. ST. MARK

Subject.	*Mark.*	*Number of Section.*
The Preface	1. 1	1
The coming of John the Baptist	2–4	2
The preaching of John the Baptist	5–8	3
The baptism of Jesus	9–11	4
The temptation of Jesus	12–13	5
The preaching in Galilee	14–15	6
The call of the first Apostles	16–20	7
An unclean spirit cast out at Capernaum	21–28	8
Simon's wife's mother cured of a fever	29–31	9
Healing in the evening	32–34	10
Retirement before fresh preaching	35–39	11
The cleansing of a leper	40–45	12
The healing of a paralytic	2. 1–12	13
The call of Levi	13–17	14
On fasting—(A) 'The sons of the bride-chamber'	18–20	15
(B) The patched garment	21	,,
(C) The wine-skins	22	,,
On the observance of the Sabbath	23–28	16
The man with a withered hand	3. 1–6	17
Many miracles of healing	7–12	18
The twelve Apostles	13–19	19
'Satan divided against Satan'	20–27	20
On the sin of blasphemy	28–30	21
Jesus' mother and brethren	31–35	22
The parable of the sower	4. 1–9	23
On the use of parables	10–12	24
Explanation of the parable of the sower	13–20	25
Five short sayings—(A)	21	26
(B)	22	,,
(C)	23	,,
(D)	24	,,
(E)	25	,,
The parable of the seed growing secretly	26–29	27
The parable of the mustard seed	30–34	28
The storm on the lake	35–41	29
The Gerasene demoniac	5. 1–20	30
Jaïrus's daughter, and the woman with an issue of blood	21–43	31
Jesus visits his own country	6. 1–6[a]	32
The mission of the Apostles	6[b]–13	33
The death of John the Baptist	14–29	34
The feeding of the five thousand	30–44	35
Walking on the water	45–52	36
Healing at Gennesaret	53–56	37
On the tradition of the Elders	7. 1–13	38
On defilement	14–23	39
The Syro-Phoenician woman	24–30	40
The deaf man with an impediment in his speech	31–37	41
The feeding of the four thousand	8. 1–10	42

TABLE I

umber of Section.	*Parallel passages from Matthew.*	*Parallel passages from Luke.*	*Miscellaneous parallels.*	*Page*
1	**1.** 1	**1.** 1–4	(John **1.** 1–18)	2
2	**3.** 1–3*, **11.** 10 (**4.** 17)	**3.** 1–6*, **7.** 27	(John **1.** 23, **1.** 6)	2
3	**3.** 4–12*	**3.** 7–17*	Acts **13.** 25[b], **1.** 5, (**11.** 16) (John **1.** 26–27)	2
4	**3.** 13–17, **17.** 5[b]	**3.** 21–22, **9.** 35	Mark **9.** 7[b] (John **1.** 32)	4
5	**4.** 1–11 (**16.** 23)	**4.** 1–13*		4
6	**4.** 12–17 (**3.** 2)	**4.** 14–15		6
7	**4.** 18–22	**5.** 1–11*	(John **1.** 35–51)	6
8	**4.** 13[b], **7.** 28–29, **4.** 24–25	**4.** 31–37		8
9	**8.** 14–15	**4.** 38–39		8
10	**8.** 16–17	**4.** 40–41		10
11	**4.** 23, **9.** 35	**4.** 42–44		10
12	**8.** 1–4	**5.** 12–16		10
13	**9.** 1–8 (**12.** 25)	**5.** 17–26 (**7.** 48–49, **6.** 8[a], **11.** 17[a])		12
14	**9.** 9–13, **12.** 7[a]	**5.** 27–32		12
15	**9.** 14–15	**5.** 33–35		14
,,	16	36		14
,,	17	37–39		14
16	**12.** 1–8, **9.** 13	**6.** 1–5		14
17	**12.** 9–14	**6.** 6–11 (**14.** 5, **13.** 15[b])		16
18	**12.** 15–21	**6.** 17–19 (**5.** 3, **4.** 41[a])		16
19	**10.** 1–5[a]*	**6.** 12–16	Acts **1.** 13[b]	18
20	**12.** 22–30, **9.** 32–34	**11.** 14–23		18
21	**12.** 31–32	**12.** 10 (**11.** 18[b])		20
22	**12.** 46–50	**8.** 19–21 (**11.** 27–28)		20
23	**13.** 1–9	**8.** 4–8	(John **12.** 24)	20
24	**13.** 10–15	**8.** 9–10	(John **12.** 39–40)	22
25	**13.** 18–23	**8.** 11–15		22
26	**5.** 15	**8.** 16, **11.** 33		24
,,	**10.** 26	**8.** 17, **12.** 2		24
,,	**11.** 15, **13.** 9, 43[b]	**14.** 35[b]	Mark **4.** 9	24
,,	**7.** 2[b], **6.** 33[b]	**8.** 18[a], **6.** 38[b], **12.** 31[b]		24
,,	**13.** 12, **25.** 29	**8.** 18[b], **19.** 26		24
27	(**13.** 24–30)			24
28	**13.** 31–32, 34–35	**13.** 18–19		26
29	**8.** 18, 23–27*	**8.** 22–25*		26
30	**8.** 28–34*	**8.** 26–39*	(Mark **1.** 24[a])	26
31	**9.** 18–26	**8.** 40–56* (**7.** 50, **17.** 19)	(Mark **6.** 56, **6.** 50, **10.** 49, 52)	30
32	**13.** 53–58*	**4.** 16–30	(John **4.** 43–45, **6.** 42, **4.** 44)	32
33	**9.** 35–38, **10.** 1–15*, **4.** 23	**9.** 1–6*, **10.** 1–12*		34
34	**14.** 1–12	**9.** 7–9 (**3.** 18–20)	(John **3.** 24)	36
35	**14.** 13–21, **9.** 36	**9.** 10–17*	(John **6.** 1–14)	38
36	**14.** 22–33		(John **6.** 15–21)	40
37	**14.** 34–35		(John **6.** 22–25)	40
38	**15.** 1–9*	(**11.** 37–41)		40
39	**15.** 10–20	**6.** 39		42
40	**15.** 21–28 (**10.** 6)			44
41	**15.** 29–31			44
42	**15.** 32–39			46

Subject.	*Mark.*	*Number of Section.*
Jesus refuses to give a sign	**8.** 11–12	43
The leaven of the Pharisees	13–21	44
A blind man at Bethsaida	22–26	45
Peter's confession of faith; and the sequel	27–33	46
On discipleship	34–38, **9.** 1	47
The Transfiguration	**9.** 2–10	48
The coming of Elijah	11–13	49
A boy with a dumb spirit	14–29	50
The second prediction of the Passion	30–32	51
On humility	33–37	52
Of helpers who are not disciples	38–41	53
Of offences	42–48	54
Three sayings about salt	49–50	55
On divorce and adultery	**10.** 1–12	56
Blessing the little children	13–16	57
On renunciation of riches	17–31	58
The third prediction of the Passion	32–34	59
The request of James and John	35–45	60
The blind man at Jericho	46–52	61
The entry into Jerusalem	**11.** 1–11	62
The fig tree, and the cleansing of the temple	12–25	63
A question about authority	27–33	64
The parable of the vineyard	**12.** 1–12	65
A question about tribute to Caesar	13–17	66
A question about the Resurrection	18–27	67
The two great commandments	28–34	68
A question about the 'Son of David'	35–37	69
Condemnation of the Scribes	38–40	70
The widow's mites	41–44	71
Eschatological Discourse—(A) Prologue	**13.** 1–2	72
(B) Signs of the end	3–8	,,
(C) Persecution	9–13	,,
(D) 'The abomination of desolation'	14–20	,,
(E) False Christs	21–23	,,
(F) Coming of the Son of man	24–27	,,
(G) Parable of the fig tree	28–33	,,
(H) Watchfulness	34–37	,,
The priests' plot	**14.** 1–2	73
The anointing at Bethany	3–9	74
The treachery of Judas	10–11	75
The last supper	12–26	76
Prediction of St. Peter's denial	27–31	77
Gethsemane	32–42	78
The betrayal	43–52	79
The trial before Caiaphas	53–65	80
St. Peter's denial	66–72	81
The trial before Pilate	**15.** 1–15	82
The crucifixion	16–41	83
The burial	42–47	84
The Resurrection	**16.** 1–8	85
Conclusion	(9–20)	86

Number of Section.	*Parallel passages from Matthew.*	*Parallel passages from Luke.*	*Miscellaneous parallels.*	*Page*
43	**16.** 1–4[a], **12.** 38–40	**11.** 16, 29–30		46
44	**16.** 4[b]–12	**11.** 53–54, **12.** 1		48
45				48
46	**16.** 13–23, **18.** 18	**9.** 18–22	(John **6.** 66–71)	48
47	**16.** 24–28, **10.** 38–39 (**10.** 32–33, **12.** 39, **16.** 4[a])	**9.** 23–27, **17.** 33 (**12.** 8–9)		50
48	**17.** 1–9	**9.** 28–36*	(John **12.** 28)	52
49	**17.** 10–13*		(John **1.** 19–28)	52
50	**17.** 14–20*	**9.** 37–43[a]		54
51	**17.** 22–23	**9.** 43[b]–45		56
52	**18.** 1–5[a], **10.** 40 (**23.** 11)	**9.** 46–48, **10.** 16 (**22.** 24)	(John **12.** 44–45, **13.** 20, **14.** 24, **15.** 23)	56
53	**10.** 42	**9.** 49–50		56
54	**18.** 6–10, **5.** 29–30*	**17.** 1–2*		58
55	**5.** 13	**14.** 34–35[a]		58
56	**19.** 1–12*, **5.** 31–32	**16.** 18		58
57	**19.** 13–15, **18.** 3[b]–4	**18.** 15–17		60
58	**19.** 16–30, **20.** 16	**18.** 18–30, **13.** 30		60
59	**20.** 17–19	**18.** 31–34		64
60	**20.** 20–28, **23.** 11	**22.** 25–27 (**12.** 50[a])	(John **10.** 15, **15.** 13)	64
61	**20.** 29–34	**18.** 35–43 (**7.** 50, **17.** 19)	(Mark **5.** 34)	66
62	**21.** 1–11	**19.** 28–44	(John **12.** 12–19)	66
63	**21.** 12–22*, **17.** 20[b], **6.** 14–16 (**7.** 28, **22.** 33)	**19.** 45–48, **21.** 37, **17.** 5–6 (**13.** 6–9)	(John **2.** 13–16, **14.** 13, **15.** 7, **16**, **16.** 23)	68
64	**21.** 23–27 (**14.** 5, **21.** 46)	**20.** 1–8		70
65	**21.** 33–46* (**22.** 22)	**20.** 9–19		72
66	**22.** 15–22	**20.** 20–26		74
67	**22.** 23–33	**20.** 27–40		74
68	**22.** 34–40, 46	**10.** 25–28		76
69	**22.** 41–46	**20.** 41–44		76
70	**23.** 1–10	**20.** 45–47, **11.** 43		78
71		**21.** 1–4		78
72	**24.** 1–2	**21.** 5–6	(John **8.** 20)	78
,,	**24.** 3–8	**21.** 7–11		78
,,	**24.** 9–14*, **10.** 17–22 (**10.** 30)	**21.** 12–19, **12.** 11–12 (**12.** 7)		80
,,	**24.** 15–22	**21.** 20–24, **17.** 31–32		80
,,	**24.** 23–28 (**24.** 11)	**17.** 20–25		82
,,	**24.** 29–31	**21.** 25–28		82
,,	**24.** 32–42, **25.** 13	**21.** 29–36, **17.** 26–30		84
,,	**25.** 14	**19.** 12–13		84
73	**26.** 1–5	**22.** 1–2		84
74	**26.** 6–13*	(**7.** 36–50)	(John **12.** 1–8)	86
75	**26.** 14–16	**22.** 3–6		86
76	**26.** 17–30	**22.** 7–23*, 39	(1 Cor. **11.** 23–25)	88
77	**26.** 31–35	**22.** 31–34		90
78	**26.** 36–46	**22.** 39–46		90
79	**26.** 47–56	**22.** 47–53	(John **18.** 1–11)	92
80	**26.** 57–68	**22.** 54–55, 67, 69–71*	(John **18.** 19–24)	92
81	**26.** 69–75	**22.** 56–62	(John **18.** 15–18, 25–27)	94
82	**27.** 1–2, 11–26	**22.** 66–71, **23.** 1–3, 18–25*	(John **18.** 28—**19.** 16)	96
83	**27.** 27–56*	**23.** 26, 33–49*	(John **19.** 17–30)	98
84	**27.** 57–61	**23.** 50–56*	(John **19.** 31–42)	102
85	**28.** 1–10*	**24.** 1–12*	(John **20.** 1–18)	102
86				104

CONTENTS OF PART II. ST. MATTHEW

Subject.	*Matthew.*	*Number of Section.*
The Preface	**1.** 1	
Genealogy	2–17	87
The Nativity	18–25	88
The Wise Men	**2.** 1–12	89
The flight into Egypt, and murder of the children	13–23	90
John the Baptist and his preaching	**3.** 1–12	
The baptism of Jesus	13–17	
The temptation	**4.** 1–11	
The living at Nazareth, and first preaching	12–17	
The call of the first Apostles	18–22	
The early ministry	23–25	
The Sermon on the Mount—(A) Introduction	**5.** 1–2	91
(B) The Beatitudes	3–12	,,
(C) Witness	14–16	,,
(D) Fulfilment of the Law	17–20	,,
(E) The law of murder	21–26	,,
(F) The law of adultery	27–32	,,
(G) On swearing	33–37	,,
(H) The law of retaliation	38–42	,,
(I) The law of love	43–48	,,
(J) Almsgiving	**6.** 1–4	,,
(K) Prayer	5–15	,,
(L) Fasting	16–18	,,
(M) Treasure	19–21	,,
(N) Light and darkness	22–23	,,
(O) 'God and mammon'	24	,,
(P) Faith in Providence	25–34	,,
(Q) Against judgement	**7.** 1–5	,,
(R) 'Pearls before swine'	6	,,
(S) The answer to prayer	7–11	,,
(T) The golden rule	12 (**22.** 40)	,,
(U) The narrow gate	13–14	,,
(V) False prophets	15–20 (**12.** 33–35)	,,
(W) 'Lord, Lord'	21–23	,,
(X) Final parable	24–27	,,
(Y) Conclusion	28–29	,,
A leper healed	**8.** 1–4	
The centurion's servant	5–13	92
Peter's wife's mother	14–15	
Healing in the evening	16–17	
Instances of discipleship	18–22	93
The storm on the lake	23–27	
The Gadarene demoniacs	28–34	
A man sick of the palsy	**9.** 1–8	
The call of Matthew	9	
Eating with publicans and sinners	10–13	
On fasting—(A) 'The sons of the bride-chamber'	14–15	
(B) The patched garment	16	
(C) The wine-skins	17	

TABLE II

Number of Section.	*Passages printed in Part I.*	*Passages printed in Part III.*	*Parallel passages from Luke.*	*Page*
	1, § 1			
87			(3. 23–28)	106
88				106
89				107
90				107
	1–3*, § 2; 4–12*, § 3; (2, § 6)			
	13–17, § 4			
	1–11, § 5			
	12–17, § 6; 13[b], § 8; (17, § 2)			
	18–22, § 7			
	23, § 11; 24–25, § 8; 23, § 33			
91		1–2, § 129 (A)	6. 17–20[a]	108
,,		3–12*, § 129 (B)	6. 20[b]–23*	108
,,	13, § 55; 15, § 26			108
,,		18, § 174 (D)	16. 17	109
,,		25–26, § 157	12. 57–59	109
,,	29–30*, § 54; 31–32, § 56			109
,,				109
,,		39–40, 42, § 129 (D)	6. 29–30	109
,,		44–48*, § 129 (D and E)	6. 27–28, 32–36	110
,,				110
,,	14–16, § 63	9–13, § 141	11. 1–4	110
,,				111
,,		19–21, § 152	12. 32–34	111
,,		22–23, § 147	11. 34–36	111
,,		24, § 174 (A)	16. 13	111
,,	33[b], § 26	25–33, § 151	12. 22–31	111
,,	2[b], § 26	1–2, § 129 (E); 35, § 129 (G)	6. 37–38, 41–42	112
,,				112
,,		7–11, § 143	11. 9–13	112
,,		12[a], § 129 (D)	6. 31	112
,,		13, § 162	13. 22–25	113
,,		16–18, § 129 (H); 20, § 129 (H)	6. 43–45*	113
,,		21, § 129 (I); 22–23, § 162	6. 46, 13. 26–27	113
,,		24–27, § 129 (I)	6. 47–49	113
,,	28–29, § 8; (28, § 63)		7. 1	114
	1–4, § 12			
92		5–10, 13, § 130; 11–12*, § 162	7. 1–10, 13. 28–30*	114
	14–15, § 9			
	16–17, § 10			
93	18, § 29	18–22, § 135	9. 57–62	115
	23–27*, § 29			
	28–34*, § 30			
	1–8, § 13			
	9, § 14			
	10–13, § 14; 13, § 16			
	14–15, § 15 (A)			
	16, § 15 (B)			
	17, § 15 (C)			

Subject.	*Matthew.*	*Number of Section.*
The ruler's daughter, and the woman with an issue of blood	**9.** 18–26	
Two blind men	27–31	94
A dumb man	32–34	
Summary of ministry	35	
'The harvest truly is plenteous'	36–38	
The twelve Apostles	**10.** 1–5[a]	
The charge to the Apostles—(A) Mission	5[b]–15	95
(B) Sheep and wolves	16	,,
(C) Persecution	17–22	,,
(D) ,,	23	,,
(E) Faith	24–33	,,
(F) Sacrifice	34–37	,,
(G) The Cross	38–39	,,
(H) Reward	40–42, **11.** 1	,,
John the Baptist	**11.** 2–19	96
Woe to unbelieving cities	20–24	97
Three meditations—(A) 'I thank thee, O Father'	25–26	98
(B) 'All things have been delivered unto me'	27	,,
(C) 'Come unto me'	28–30	,,
On the Sabbath	**12.** 1–8	
A man with a withered hand	9–21	
A blind and dumb man	22–30	
Blasphemy	31–32	
On the importance of words	33–37	99
A sign	38–40	
'This generation'	41–42	100
'The unclean spirit'	43–45	101
Jesus' mother and brethren	46–50	
Parable of the sower	**13.** 1–9	
On the use of parables (i)	10–15	
'Blessed are your eyes'	16–17	102
Explanation of the parable of the sower	18–23	
Parables of the Kingdom—(A) Parable of the tares of the field	24–30	103
(B) Parable of the mustard seed	31–32	,,
(C) Parable of the leaven	33	,,
(D) On the use of parables (ii)	34–35	,,
(E) Explanation of the tares of the field	36–43	,,
(F) Parable of the treasure	44	,,
(G) Parable of the pearl	45–46	,,
(H) Parable of the net	47–50	,,
(I) 'Things new and old'	51–52	,,
Jesus in his own country	53–58	
Death of John the Baptist	**14.** 1–12	
The feeding of the five thousand	13–21	
Walking on the water	22–33	
Ministry in Gennesaret	34–36	
The tradition of the elders	**15.** 1–9	
On defilement	10–20	
The Canaanitish woman	21–28	
Ministry at lake of Galilee	29–31	

umber of ection.	*Passages printed in Part I.*	*Passages printed in Part III.*	*Parallel passages from Luke.*	*Page*
	18–26, § 31			
94				115
	32–34, § 20			
	35, § 11; 35, § 33			
	36–38, § 33; 36, § 35			
	1–5[a]*, § 19; 1, 5[a], § 33			
95	5[b]–15*, § 33; (6, § 40)			
,,			10. 3	115
,,	17–22, § 72 (C)			
,,				115
,,	(32–33, § 47); 26, § 26; (30, § 72 (C))	24–25, § 129 (F); 27–33, § 149 (B–E)	6. 40, 12. 3–9	115
,,		34–36, § 155; 37, § 168	12. 51–53, 14. 25–27	116
,,	38–39, § 47			
,,	40, § 52; 42, § 53	40, § 136		116
96	10, § 2; 15, § 26	2–11, 16–19, § 132; 12–13*, § 174 (C)	7. 18–35, 16. 16*	117
97		21–24*, § 136	10. 13–15	118
98		25–26, § 138 (A)	10. 21	118
,,		27, § 138 (B)	10. 22	118
,,				118
	1–8, § 16; 7[a], § 14			
	9–14, § 17; 15–21, § 18			
	22–30, § 20; (25, § 13)			
	31–32, § 21			
99		33–35*, § 129 (H)		118
	38–40, § 43; (39, § 47)			
100		41–42*, § 146	11. 31–32*	119
101		43–45, § 144	11. 24–26	119
	46–50, § 22			
	1–9, § 23; 9, § 26			
	10–15, § 24; 12, § 26			
102		16–17, § 138 (C)	10. 23–24	119
	18–23, § 25			
103	(24–30, § 27)			119
,,	31–32, § 28			
,,		33, § 161	13. 20–21	120
,,	34–35, § 28			
,,	43[b], § 26			120
,,				120
,,				120
,,				120
,,				120
,,				
	53–58*, § 32			
	1–12, § 34; (5, § 64)			
	13–21, § 35			
	22–33, § 36			
	34–36, § 37			
	1–9*, § 38			
	10–20, § 39	14, § 129 (F)		
	21–28, § 40			
	29–31, § 41			

Subject.	*Matthew.*	*Num Sec*
The feeding of the four thousand	**15.** 32–9	
'Signs of the times'	**16.** 1–4	104
'The leaven of the Pharisees'	5–12	
St. Peter's Confession and the sequel—(A) The confession	13–16	
(B) The commission	17–20	
(C) 'Get thee behind me'	21–23	
On self-sacrifice	24–26	
The coming of the Son of Man	27–28	
The Transfiguration	**17.** 1–8	
The coming of Elijah	9–13	
A demoniac boy	14–20	
Second prediction of the Passion	22–23	
The coin in the fish's mouth	24–27	105
On offences against children	**18.** 1–10	
The lost sheep	12–14	106
Ecclesiastical sayings—(A) Discipline	15–17	107
(B) Forgiveness	18	,,
(C) Common Prayer	19–20	,,
The unmerciful servant	21–35	108
Jesus comes into Judaea	**19.** 1–2	
On marriage and divorce	3–12	
Blessing little children	13–15	
'One that had great possessions'	16–22	
The surrender of riches	23–30	
Parable of the labourers in the vineyard	**20.** 1–16	109
Third prediction of the Passion	17–19	
The request of James and John	20–28	
Two blind men at Jericho	29–34	
The entry into Jerusalem	**21.** 1–11	
Cleansing the temple	12–17	
The withering of the fig tree	18–22	
A question about authority	23–27	
Parable of the two sons	28–32	110
Parable of the vineyard	33–41	
'The head of the Corner'	42–46	
Parable of the marriage feast	**22.** 1–14	111
A question about tribute to Caesar	15–22	
A question about the Resurrection	23–33	
The two great commandments	34–40	
'David's son'	41–46	
Woe to Scribes and Pharisees—(A) Hypocrisy	**23.** 1–10	112
(B) Humility	11–12	,,
(C) Shutting the kingdom of heaven	13	,,
(D) Proselytism	15	,,
(E) Swearing	16–22	,,
(F) Tithe	23–24	,,
(G) Cup and platter	25–26	,,
(H) Whited sepulchres	27–28	,,
(I) Persecution	29–36	,,
(J) 'O Jerusalem, Jerusalem'	37–39	,,
Eschatological Discourse—(A) Introduction	**24.** 1–2	
(B)	3–14	

Number of Section.	Passages printed in Part I.	Passages printed in Part III.	Parallel passages from Luke.	Page
	32–39, § 42			
104	1–4[a], § 43; 4[b], § 44; (4[a], § 47)	1–3, § 156	12. 54–56	120
	5–12, § 44			
	13–16, § 46 (A)			
	17–20, § 46 (A)			
	21–23, § 46 (B); (23, § 5)			
	24–26, § 47			
	27–28, § 47			
	1–8, § 48; 5[b], § 4			
	9, § 48; 10–13*, § 49			
	14–20*, § 50; 20[b], § 63			
	22–23, § 51			
105				121
	1–5, § 52; 6–10, § 54; 3[b]–4, § 57			
106		12–13, § 170	15. 1–7	121
107		15, § 176	17. 8	121
,,	18, § 46			121
,,				121
108		21, § 176	17. 4	122
	1–2, § 56			
	3–12*, § 56			
	13–15, § 57			
	16–22, § 58			
	23–30, § 58	28, § 184		122
109	16. § 58			
	17–19, § 59			
	20–28, § 60			
	29–34, § 61			
	1–11, § 62			
	12–17, § 63			
	18–22*, § 63			
	23–27, § 64			123
110				
	33–41, § 65			
	42–46*, § 65; (46, § 64)			
111		1–14, § 167	14. 15–24	123
	15–22, § 66; (22, § 65)			
	23–33, § 67; (33, § 63)			
	34–40, § 68			
	41–46, § 69; 46, § 68			
112	1–10, § 70	6–7, § 148 (C)		124
,,	11, § 60; (11, § 52)			124
,,		13, § 148 (G)	11. 52	124
,,				124
,,				124
,,		23, § 148 (B)	11. 42	124
,,		25–26, § 148 (A)	11. 37–41	124
,,		27–28, § 148 (D)	11. 44	124
,,		29–36, § 148 (F)	11. 45–51	125
,,		37–39, § 164	13. 34–35	125
,,				
	1–2, § 72 (A)			
	3–8, § 72 (B); 9–14*, § 72 (C); (11, § 72 (E))			

Subject.	*Matthew.*	*Number of Section.*
Eschatological Discourse—(C)	**24.** 15–28	
(D)	29–31	
(E) The fig tree	32–33	
(F) The time of the end	34–36	
(G) The days of Noah	37–39	
(H) 'One taken and one left'	40–41	
(I) 'Watch'	42	
(J) Readiness for Christ's coming	43–51	113
Parable of the ten virgins	**25.** 1–13	114
Parable of the talents	14–30	115
A parable of judgement	31–46	116
Fourth prediction of the Passion	**26.** 1–2	
The priests' plot	3–5	
The anointing at Bethany	6–13	
The treachery of Judas	14–16	
The Last Supper—(A) The preparation	17–19	
(B) Prediction of the betrayal	20–25	
(C) Institution of the Eucharist	26–30	
Prediction of Peter's denial	31–35	
Gethsemane	36–46	
The betrayal	47–56	
The trial before Caiaphas	57–68	
Peter's denial	69–75	
Jesus taken before Pilate	**27.** 1–2	
The death of Judas	3–10	117
The trial before Pilate	11–26	
The mocking and scourging	27–31	
The Crucifixion—(A) Golgotha	32–38	
(B) Behaviour of the crowd	39–44	
(C) Last hours	45–50	
(D) Portents	51–53	
(E) The centurion, and the women	54–56	
The burial	57–61	
The guard (i)	62–66	118
The Resurrection—(A) At the tomb	**28.** 1–8	
(B) The first appearance	9–10	
The guard (ii)	11–15	119
Conclusion	16–20	120

Number of Section.	*Passages printed in Part I.*	*Passages printed in Part III.*	*Parallel passages from Luke.*	*Page*
	15–22, § 72 (D); 23–28, § 72 (E)			
	29–31, § 72 (F)			
	32–33, § 72 (G)			
	34–36, § 72 (G)			
	37–39, § 72 (G)			
	40–41, § 72 (G)			
	42, § 72 (G)			
113		43–51, § 154	**12.** 39–48	125
114	13, § 72 (G)		(**12.** 35–38)	126
115	14, § 72 (H); 29, § 26	14–30, § 183	**19.** 11–27	126
116				127
	1–2, § 73			
	3–5, § 73			
	6–13*, § 74			
	14–16, § 75			
	17–19, § 76			
	20–25, § 76			
	26–30, § 76			
	31–35, § 77			
	36–46, § 78			
	47–56, § 79			
	57–68, § 80			
	69–75, § 81			
	1–2, § 82			
117				128
	11–26, § 82			
	27–31*, § 83			
	32–38, § 83			
	39–44, § 83			
	45–50, § 83			
	51–53, § 83			
	54–56*, § 83			
	57–61, § 84			
118				128
	1–8*, § 85			
	9–10, § 85			
119				129
120				129

CONTENTS OF PART III. ST. LUKE

Subject.	*Luke.*	*Number of Section.*
The Preface	**1.** 1–4	
The promise of the birth of John the Baptist	5–25	121
The Annunciation	26–38	122
The Visitation	39–56	123
The birth of John the Baptist	57–80	124
The Nativity	**2.** 1–20	125
The Circumcision and Presentation	21–40	126
Jesus and the Doctors in the Temple	41–52	127
John the Baptist, and his preaching	**3.** 1–17	
Imprisonment of John the Baptist	18–20	
The Baptism	21–22	
Genealogy	23–38	128
The Temptation	**4.** 1–13	
The ministry in Galilee (i)	14–15	
The visit to Nazareth	16–30	
A man with an unclean spirit at Capernaum	31–37	
Simon's wife's mother	38–39	
Healing in the evening	40–41	
The ministry in Galilee (ii)	42–44	
The call of the first apostles	**5.** 1–11	
A leper cleansed	12–16	
A palsied man healed	17–26	
The call of Levi	27–28	
Eating with publicans and sinners	29–32	
On fasting	33–39	
On the Sabbath	**6.** 1–5	
A man with a withered hand	6–11	
The twelve Apostles	12–16	
The Sermon on the Plain—(A) Introduction	17–19	129
(B) Beatitudes	20–23	,,
(C) Woes	24–26	,,
(D) Love	27–35	,,
(E) Judgement (i)	36–38	,,
(F) Master and disciple	39–40	,,
(G) Judgement (ii)	41–42	,,
(H) Good and bad	43–45	,,
(I) Concluding parable	46–49	,,
The centurion's servant	**7.** 1–10	130
The widow's son at Nain	11–17	131
John the Baptist	18–35	132
The anointing of Jesus	36–50	133
	8. 1–3	
The parable of the Sower	4–8	
The use of parables	9–10	
Explanation of the parable of the Sower	11–15	
Three sayings—(A) A lamp	16	
(B) 'Nothing hid'	17	
(C) 'Take heed how ye hear'	18	

TABLE III

Number of Section.	*Passages printed in Part I.*	*Passages printed in Part II.*	*Parallel passages from Matthew.*	*Page*
	1–4, § 1			
121				130
122				130
123				131
124				132
125				132
126				133
127				134
	1–6*, § 2; 7–17*, § 3			
	18–20, § 34			
	21–22, § 4			
128		23–38, § 87	(1. 2–17)	134
	1–13*, § 5			
	14–15, § 6			
	16–30, § 32			
	31–37, § 8			
	38–39, § 9			
	40–41, § 10; (41[a], § 18)			
	42–44, § 11			
	1–11*, § 7; (3, § 18)			
	12–16, § 12			
	17–26, § 13			
	27–28, § 14			
	29–32, § 14			
	33–39, § 15			
	1–5, § 16			
	6–11, § 17; (8[a], § 13)			
	12–16, § 19			
129	17–19, § 18	17–19, § 91 (A and B)	5. 1–2	135
,,		20–23*, § 91 (B)	5. 3–12*	135
,,				136
,,		27–30*, 32–36*, § 91 (H and I); 31, § 91 (T)	5. 39–40, 42, 44*	136
,,	38[b], § 26 (D)	37–38, 41–42, § 91 (Q)	5. 48, 7. 1–2	136
,,	39, § 39	40, § 95 (E)	10. 24–25, 15. 14	136
,,			7. 3–5	137
,,		43–45*, § 91 (V)	7. 16, 18, 20*, 12. 33–35*	137
,,		46, § 91 (W); 47–49, § 91 (X)	7. 21, 24 27	137
130		1, § 91 (Y); 1–10, § 92	8. 5–10, 13	138
131				138
132	27, § 2; (19, § 31); (19, § 61)	18–35, § 96	11. 2–11, 16–19	139
133	(36–50, § 74); (48–49, § 13); (50, § 31); (50, § 61)			140
	4–8, § 23			
	9–10, § 24			
	11–15, § 25			
	16, § 26 (A)			
	17, § 26 (B)			
	18[a], § 26 (D); 18[b], § 26 (E)			

Subject.	*Luke.*	*Number of Section.*
Jesus' mother and brethren	8. 19–21	
The storm on the lake	22–25	
The Gerasene demoniac	26–39	
Jaïrus's daughter, and the woman with an issue of blood	40–56	
The charge to the Apostles	9. 1–6	
Herod's interest in Jesus	7–9	
The feeding of the five thousand	10–17	
The confession of St. Peter	18–22	
Sacrifice	23–25	
The coming of the Son of Man	26–27	
The Transfiguration	28–36	
The demoniac boy	37–43[a]	
Second prediction of the Passion	43[b]–45	
Humility	46–48	
A helper who was not a disciple	49–50	
The inhospitable Samaritans	51–56	134
Instances of discipleship	57–62	135
The charge to the seventy—(A) Introduction	10. 1	
(B) 'The harvest is plenteous'	2	
(C) Mission	3–12	
(D) Woe to unbelieving cities	13–16	136
The return of the seventy	17–20	137
Three meditations—(A) 'I thank thee, O Father'	21	138
(B) 'All things have been delivered unto me	22	,,
(C) 'Blessed are the eyes'	23–24	,,
The two great commandments	25–28	
The parable of the good Samaritan	29–37	139
Martha and Mary	38–42	140
The Lord's Prayer	11. 1–4	141
The importunate friend	5–8	142
Perseverance in prayer	9–13	143
The origin of miraculous power	14–20	
'The strong man armed'	21–23	
'The unclean spirit'	24–26	144
True blessedness	27–28	145
A sign	29–30	
'This generation	31–32	146
Light and darkness	33	
Sayings about a lamp	34–36	147
Woe to Pharisees and Lawyers—(A) Washing	37–41	148
(B) Tithe	42	,,
(C) Chief seats	43	,,
(D) Tombs	44	,,
(E) Burdens	45–46	,,
(F) Persecution	47–51	,,
(G) 'Key of knowledge'	52	,,
(H) Opposition of Scribes and Pharisees	53–54	,,
Various sayings—(A) 'The leaven of the Pharisees'	12. 1	149
(B) Plain speech	2–3	,,
(C) Whom to fear	4–5	,,
(D) Providence	6–7	,,
(E) Confession of Christ	8–9	,,
(F) Blasphemy	10	,,

Number of Section.	*Passages printed in Part I.*	*Passages printed in Part II.*	*Parallel passages from Matthew.*	*Page*
	19–21, § 22			
	22–25*, § 29			
	26–39*, § 30			
	40–56*, § 31			
	1–6*, § 33			
	7–9, § 34			
	10–17*, § 35			
	18–22, § 46			
	23–25, § 47			
	26–27, § 47			
	28–36*, § 48 ; 35, § 4			
	37–43[a], § 50			
	43[b]–45, § 51			
	46–48, § 52			
	49–50, § 53			
134				140
135		57–62, § 93	8. 18–22	141
	1, § 33			
	2, § 33			
	3–12*, § 33	3, § 95 (B) ; 12, § 97		
136	16, § 52	13–15, § 97	11. 21–24*, 10. 40	141
137				142
138		21, § 98 (A)	11. 25–28	142
,,		22, § 98 (B)	11. 27	142
,,		23–24, § 102	13. 16–17	142
	25–28, § 68			
139				142
140				143
141		1–4, § 91 (K)	6. 9–13	143
142				143
143		9–13, § 91 (S)	7. 7–11	143
	14–20, § 20 ; 16, § 43 ; (17[a], § 13) ; (18[b], § 21)			
	21–23, § 20			
144		24–26, § 101	12. 43–45	144
145	(27–28, § 22)			144
	29–30, § 43			
146		31–32*, § 100	12. 41–42*	144
	33, § 26 (A)			
147		34–36, § 91 (N)	6. 22–23	144
148	(37–41, § 38)	37–41, § 112 (G)	23. 25–26	144
,,		42, § 112 (F)	23. 23	145
,,	43, § 70		23. 6–7	145
,,		44, § 112 (H)	23. 27–28	145
,,		45–46, § 112 (I)		145
,,		47–51, § 112 (I)	23. 29–36	145
,,		52, § 112 (C)	23. 13	145
,,	53–54, § 44			145
149	1, § 44			145
,,	2, § 26 (B)	3, § 95 (E)	10. 27	146
,,		4–5, § 95 (E)	10. 28	146
,,	(7, § 72 (C))	6–7, § 95 (E)	10. 29–31	146
,,	(8–9, § 47)	8–9, § 95 (E)	10. 32–33	146
,,	10, § 21			

Subject.	*Luke.*	*Number of Section.*
Various sayings—(G) Inspiration	**12.** 11–12	149
Parable of the rich fool	13–21	150
Faith in providence	22–31	151
'Treasure in heaven'	32–34	152
Watchfulness	35–38	153
Readiness for Christ's coming	39–48	154
Religious divisions	49–53	155
'Signs of the times'	54–56	156
Reconciliation	57–59	157
The Galilaeans, and the tower of Siloam	**13.** 1–5	158
Parable of the fig tree	6–9	159
A woman with a spirit of infirmity	10–17	160
Parable of the mustard seed	18–19	
A saying about leaven	20–21	161
'The narrow door'	22–30	162
Christ and Herod	31–33	163
'O Jerusalem, Jerusalem'	34–35	164
A man with dropsy	**14.** 1–6	165
Humility and Hospitality	7–14	166
Parable of the Marriage Feast	15–24	167
Discipleship	25–27	168
Counting the cost	28–33	169
Saying about salt	34–35	
The lost sheep	**15.** 1–7	170
The lost coin	8–10	171
Parable of the prodigal son	11–32	172
Parable of the unjust steward	**16.** 1–12	173
Four sayings—(A) God and Mammon	13	174
(B) Covetousness of Pharisees	14–15	,,
(C) The law and the gospel	16	,,
(D) Permanence of the law	17	,,
Adultery	18	
Parable of Dives and Lazarus	19–31	175
Offences against children	**17.** 1–2	
Forgiveness	3–4	176
Faith	5–6	
'Unprofitable servants'	7–10	177
The ten lepers	11–19	178
'The kingdom of God is within you'	20–21	
Apocalyptic sayings—(A) The days of the Son of man	22–24	
(B) The Passion	25	
(C) The days of Noah and Lot	26–30	
(D) The need of haste	31–32	
(E) Sacrifice	33	
(F) 'One taken, another left'	34–37	179
Parable of the Judge and the Widow	**18.** 1–8	180
Parable of the Pharisee and the Publican	9–14	181
Blessing little children	15–17	
The rich ruler	18–23	
The surrender of riches	24–27	
The reward of surrender	28–30	
Prediction of the Passion	31–34	
A blind man at Jericho	35–43	

Number of Section.	*Passages printed in Part I.*	*Passages printed in Part II.*	*Parallel passages from Matthew.*	*Page*
149	11–12, § 72 (C)			
150				146
151	31[b], § 26 (D)	22–31, § 91 (P)	**6.** 25–33	146
152		32–34, § 91 (M)	**6.** 19–21	147
153		(35–38, § 114)		147
154		39–48, § 113	**24.** 43–51	147
155	(50[a], § 60)	51–53, § 95 (F)	**10.** 34–36	148
156		54–56, § 104	**16.** 1–3	148
157		57–59, § 91 (E)	**5.** 25–26	149
158				149
159	(6–9, § 63)			149
160	(15[b], § 17)			149
	18–19, § 28			
161		20–21, § 103 (C)	**13.** 33	150
162	30, § 58	22–25, § 91 (V); 26–27, § 91 (W); 28–30*, § 92	7. 13, 22–23, 8. 11–12*	150
163				151
164		34–35, § 112 (J)	**23.** 37–39	151
165	(5, § 17)			151
166				151
167		15–24, § 111	**22.** 1–14	152
168		25–26, § 95 (F)	**10.** 37	152
169				153
	34–35[a], § 55; 35[b], § 26 (C)			
170		1–7, § 106	**18.** 12–13	153
171				153
172				153
173				154
174		13, § 91 (O)	**6.** 24	155
,,				155
,,		16, § 96; 17, § 91 (D)	**11.** 12–13*	155
,,			**5.** 18	155
	18, § 56			
175				155
	1–2*, § 54			
176		3, § 107 (A); 4, § 108	**18.** 15, 21	155
	5–6, § 63			
177				156
178				156
	20–21, § 72 (E)			
	22–24, § 72 (E)			
	25, § 72 (E)			
	26–30, § 72 (G)			
	31–32, § 72 (D)			
	33, § 47			
179				156
180				156
181				157
	15–17, § 57			
	18–23, § 58			
	24–27, § 58			
	28–30, § 58			
	31–34, § 59			
	35–43, § 61			

Subject.	*Luke.*	*Number of Section.*
Zacchaeus	**19.** 1–10	182
The parable of the pounds	11–27	183
The entry into Jerusalem	28–40	
Prediction of the fall of Jerusalem	41–44	
The cleansing of the temple	45–46	
Teaching in the temple	47–48	
A question about authority	**20.** 1–8	
Parable of the vineyard	9–16	
'The head of the corner'	17–19	
A question about tribute to Caesar	20–26	
A question about the Resurrection	27–40	
'David's Son'	41–44	
'Beware of the Scribes'	45–47	
The widow's mites	**21.** 1–4	
Apocalyptic discourse—(A) Introduction	5–6	
(B) The time	7–9	
(C) Portents and persecutions	10–19	
(D) Fall of Jerusalem, and coming of Son of man	20–28	
(E) Fig tree	29–33	
(F) Watchfulness	34–36	
(G) Conclusion	37–38	
The treachery of Judas	**22.** 1–6	
The Last Supper—(A) Preparation	7–13	
(B) Institution of the Eucharist	14–20	
(C) Prediction of betrayal	21–23	
(D) Humility	24–27	
(E) Promise of the Kingdom	28–30	184
(F) Prediction of Peter's denial	31–34	
(G) Change of methods	35–38	185
Gethsemane	39–46	
The betrayal	47–53	
Peter's denial	54–62	
The mocking	63–65	
The trial before the Council	66–71	
The first trial before Pilate	**23.** 1–3	
Jesus before Herod	4–12	186
The second trial before Pilate	13–19	187
The sentence	20–25	
The Crucifixion—(A) Simon of Cyrene	26	
(B) 'Daughters of Jerusalem'	27–32	188
(C) The Crucifixion	33–34	
(D) Behaviour of the crowd	35–37	
(E) The superscription	38	
(F) The penitent thief	39–43	
(G) The death	44–46	
(H) The centurion and others	47–49	
The Burial	50–56	
The Resurrection—(A) At the tomb	**24.** 1–7	
(B) The women's report	8–11	
(C) Peter at the tomb	12	
The appearance on the way to Emmaus	13–35	189
An appearance to the Apostles	36–43	190
Jesus' last words	44–49	191
The Ascension	50–53	192

Number of Section.	*Passages printed in Part I.*	*Passages printed in Part II.*	*Parallel passages from Matthew.*	*Page*
182				157
183	12–13, § 72 (H); 26, § 26 (E)	11–27*, § 115	25. 14–30*	157
	28–40, § 62			
	41–44, § 62			
	45–46, § 63			
	47–48, § 63			
	1–8, § 64			
	9–16, § 65			
	17–19, § 65			
	20–26, § 66			
	27–40, § 67			
	41–44, § 69			
	45–47, § 70			
	1–4, § 71			
	5–6, § 72 (A)			
	7–9, § 72 (B)			
	10–11, § 72 (B); 12–19, § 72 (C)			
	20–24, § 72 (D); 25–28, § 72 (F)			
	29–33, § 72 (G			
	34–36, § 72 (G)			
	37–38, § 63			
	1–2, § 73; 3–6, § 75			
	7–13*, § 76			
	14–20*, § 76			
	21–23, § 76			
	25–27, § 60; (24, § 52)			
184			19. 28	158
	31–34, § 77			
185				159
	39–46, § 78; 39, § 76			
	47–53, § 79			
	54–55, § 80; 56–62, § 81			
	63–65. § 80			
	66–71, § 82; 67, § 80; 69–71*, § 80			
	1–3, § 82			
186				159
187	18–19, § 82			159
	20–25, § 82			
	26, § 83			
188				159
	33–34, § 83			
	35–37*, § 83			
	38, § 83			
	39–43, § 83			
	44–46*, § 83			
	47–49*, § 83			
	50–56*, § 84			
	1–7*, § 85			
	8–11, § 85			
	12, § 85			
189				160
190				160
191				161
192				161

CORRIGENDUM

Page 71, col. 1, l. 6, after Luke xxi. 37 add—

38 *And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, to hear him.*

PART I. ST. MARK

§ 1. THE

Mark i.

1 The *beginning of the gospel*
of Jesus Christ, 1 the Son of *God*.

Matt. i.

1 The *book of the generation*
of Jesus Christ, the son of *David*,
the son of Abraham.

§ 2. THE COMING OF

Mark i.

2 Even as it is written

in Isaiah the prophet,
'Behold, I send my messenger
before thy face,
Who shall prepare thy way'; [a]

3 'The voice of one crying in the wilderness,
Make ye ready the way of the Lord,
Make his paths straight;' [b]

4 John came,
who baptized in the wilderness

and preached the baptism of repentance
unto remission of sins.

Matt. iii.

3 For this is he that was spoken of

by Isaiah the prophet, saying,

'The voice of one crying in the wilderness,
Make ye ready the way of the Lord,
Make his paths straight.' [b]

1 And in those days

cometh John *the Baptist*,
preaching in the wilderness *of Judaea, saying*,

2 Repent ye; *for the kingdom of heaven is at hand*.

§ 3. THE PREACHING OF

Mark i.

5 And there went out unto him
all *the country of* Judaea,
and *all they of* Jerusalem;
and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan,
confessing their sins.
6 And John *was clothed*
with camel's hair,
'and had a leathern girdle about his loins,' [c]
and *did eat* locusts and wild honey.

Matt. iii.

5 Then went out unto him
Jerusalem, and all Judaea,
and all the region round about Jordan;
6 And they were baptized of him in the river Jordan,
confessing their sins.
4 Now John himself *had his raiment*
of camel's hair,
'And a leathern girdle about his loins;' [c]
and *his food was* locusts and wild honey.
7 But *when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees*
coming to his baptism, he said unto them,
Ye offspring of vipers,
who warned you to flee from the wrath to come?
8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy of repentance:
9 And think not to say within yourselves,
We have Abraham to our father:
for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones
to raise up children unto Abraham.
10 And even now is the axe laid unto the root of the trees:
every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit
is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

[a] Mal. iii. 1. [b] Isa. xl. 3–5. [c] 2 Kings i. 8.

PREFACE.

Luke i.

Cf. John i. 1–18.

1 *Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to draw up a narrative*
concerning those matters which have been fulfilled among us, |
2 *even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning*
3 *were eyewitnesses and ministers of the word,* | *it seemed good*
to me also, having traced the course of all things accurately
from the first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent
4 *Theophilus;* | *that thou mightest know the certainty concerning*
the things wherein thou wast instructed.

JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke iii. | **Matt. xi.** | **Luke vii.**

4 . . . as it is written

in *the book of the words of* Isaiah the prophet,

10 This is he, of whom it is written,

'Behold, I send my messenger
before thy face,
Who shall prepare thy way
before thee.' [a]

27 This is he of whom it is written,

'Behold, I send my messenger
before thy face,
Who shall prepare thy way
before thee.' [a]

'The voice of one crying in the wilderness,
Make ye ready the way of the Lord,
Make his paths straight.
5 *Every valley shall be filled, And every mountain and*
hill shall be brought low; And the crooked shall become
6 *straight, And the rough ways smooth;* | *And all flesh*
shall see the salvation of God.' [b]

Cf. John i. 23.

1 Now in *the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar,*
Pontius Pilate being governor of Judaea, and Herod being
tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of the
region of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch
2 *of Abilene,* | *in the high-priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas,*
the word of God came unto John *the son of Zacharias*
in the wilderness.
3 *And he came into all the region round about Jordan,*
preaching the baptism of repentance
unto remission of sins;

Cf. Matt. iv.

17 *From that time began Jesus to preach, and to say,*
Repent ye; *for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.*

Cf. John i. 6.

JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke iii.

7 He said therefore to *the multitudes* that went out to be
baptized of him,
Ye offspring of vipers,
who warned you to flee from the wrath to come?
8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance,
and begin not to say within yourselves,
We have Abraham to our father:
for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones
to raise up children unto Abraham.
9 And even now is the axe also laid unto the root of the trees:
every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit
is hewn down, and cast into the fire.
10 *And the multitudes asked him, saying, What then must we*
11 *do?* | *And he answered and said unto them, He that hath two*

M. *omit* the Son of God.

§ 3. THE PREACHING OF

Mark i.

7 *And he preached*, saying,
There cometh after me he that is mightier than I,
the latchet of whose shoes
I am not worthy to *stoop down* and unloose.
8 I baptized you with water;
but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

Matt. iii.

11b but he that cometh after me is mightier than I,
whose shoes
I am not worthy *to bear*:
11a I indeed baptize you with water *unto repentance*:
11c he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:
12 whose fan is in his hand.
and he will throughly cleanse his threshing-floor;
and he will gather his wheat into the garner,
but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

§ 4. THE BAPTISM

Mark i.

9 And it came to pass in those days,
that Jesus came from *Nazareth* of Galilee,
and was baptized of John in the Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water,

he saw the heavens *rent asunder*,
and the Spirit as a dove
descending upon him:
11 and a voice came out of the heavens,
'Thou art my beloved Son,
In thee I am well pleased.'[a]

Matt. iii.

13 Then
cometh Jesus from Galilee
to the Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.
14 *But John would have hindered him, saying, I have need to*
15 *be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? | But Jesus*
answering said unto him, suffer it now: for thus it becometh
us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffereth him.
16 And Jesus, when he was baptized went up straightway
from the water:
and *lo*, the heavens were opened [1] *unto him*,
and he saw the Spirit *of God* descending as a dove,
and coming upon him;
17 and *lo*, a voice out of the heavens, saying,
'This is my beloved Son,
in whom I am well pleased.'[a]

Matt. xvii.

5b and *behold*, a voice out of the cloud, saying,
'This is my beloved Son,
in whom I am well pleased;'[a]
'hear ye him.'[b]

§ 5. THE TEMPTATION

Mark i.

12 And *straightway* the Spirit *driveth him forth*
into the wilderness
13 And he was in the wilderness forty days
tempted of *Satan*;
and he was with the wild beasts;

Matt. iv.

1 Then was Jesus led *up* of the Spirit
into the wilderness
to be tempted of the devil.
2 And when he *had fasted*
'forty days *and forty nights*,'[d]
he *afterward* hungered.
3 And the *tempter came* and said unto him,
If thou art the Son of God,
command that these stones become bread.
4 But he answered and said, It is written,
'Man shall not live by bread alone,
but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.'[e]

[a] Isa. xlii. 1; cf. Ps. ii. 7. [b] Deut. xviii. 15. [c] Deut. viii. 2.
[d] Deut. ix. 9; 1 Kings xix. 8. [e] Deut. viii. 3.

JOHN THE BAPTIST (*continued*).

Luke iii.

coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that
12 *hath food, let him do likewise.* | *And there came also publicans*
to be baptized, and they said unto him, Master, what must we
13 *do?* | *And he said unto them, Extort no more than that*
14 *which is appointed you.* | *And soldiers also asked him, saying,*
And we, what must we do? And he said unto them, Do
violence to no man, neither exact anything wrongfully; and
be content with your wages.
15 *And as the people were in expectation, and all men reasoned*
in their hearts concerning John, whether haply he were the
16a *Christ; John answered,*
saying *unto them all,*
16c but there cometh he that is mightier than I,
the latchet of whose shoes
I am not worthy to unloose:
16b I indeed baptize you with water;
16d he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:
17 whose fan is in his hand,
throughly to cleanse his threshing-floor,
and to gather the wheat into his garner;
but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

Cf. Acts xiii.

25b . . . But behold, there cometh one after me,
the shoes of whose feet I am not worthy to unloose.

Cf. Acts i.

5 for John indeed baptized with water;
but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many
days hence. [=Acts xi. 16.]

Cf. John i. 26-27.

OF JESUS.

Luke iii.

21 Now it came to pass, *when all the people were baptized,*
that, Jesus also

having been baptized, *and praying,*

the heaven was opened,
22 and the *Holy Ghost* descended *in a bodily form,* as a dove,
upon him,
and a voice came out of heaven,
'Thou art my beloved Son;
in thee I am well pleased.' a

Cf. John i. 32

Luke ix.

35 And a voice came out of the cloud, saying,
'This is my[2] Son,' a *my chosen:*

'hear ye him.' b

Mark ix.

7b and there came a voice out of the cloud,
'This is my beloved Son': a

'hear ye him.' b

OF JESUS.

Luke iv.

1 And Jesus *full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan,* and 'was led' by the Spirit
'in the wilderness' c
during forty days,
being tempted of the devil.
2 And he *did eat nothing in those days:*
and *when they were completed,* he hungered.
3 And the *devil* said unto him,
If thou art the Son of God,
command this stone that it become bread.
4 And Jesus answered unto him, It is written
'Man shall not live by bread alone.' d

[1] M. *omit* unto him.

[2] M. *add* beloved.

§ 5. THE TEMPTATION

Mark i.

Matt. iv.

5 Then *the devil taketh* him into *the holy city*;
and he set him on the pinnacle of the temple,
6 and saith unto him, If thou art the Son of God,
cast thyself down; for it is written,
'He shall give his angels charge concerning thee:
And on their hands they shall bear thee up,
Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.' [a]
7 Jesus said unto him, *Again* it is written,
'Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.' [b]
8 Again, *the devil taketh* him *unto an exceedingly high mountain*,
and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world,
and the glory of them;
9 And he said unto him, All these things will I give thee,

if thou wilt *fall down* and worship me.
10 Then saith Jesus unto him, *Get thee hence, Satan:*
for it is written, 'Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,
and him only shalt thou serve.' [c]
11 Then the devil leaveth him;
and *behold*, angels *came* and ministered unto him.

and the angels ministered unto him.

§ 6. THE PREACHING

Mark i.

Matt. iv.

14 Now after that John was delivered up,
Jesus came into Galilee

12 Now *when he heard* that John was delivered up,
he *withdrew* into Galilee;
13 *and leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum,*
which is by the sea, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali:
14 *that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the*
prophet, saying,
15 *'The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,*
Toward the sea, beyond Jordan,
Galilee of the Gentiles,
16 *The people which sat in darkness*
Saw a great light,
And to them which sat in the region and shadow of death,
To them did light spring up.' [d]

preaching the *gospel of God*, and saying,
15 *The time is fulfilled*,
and the kingdom of *God* is at hand:
repent ye, *and believe in the gospel.*

17 From that time began Jesus to preach, and to say,

Repent ye;
for the kingdom of *heaven* is at hand.

§ 7. THE CALL OF

Mark i.

Matt. iv.

16 And *passing along* by the sea of Galilee,
he saw Simon
and Andrew the brother of Simon

18 And *walking* by the sea of Galilee,
he saw *two brethren*, Simon *who is called Peter*,
and Andrew his brother,

[a] Ps. xci. 11. [b] Deut. vi. [c] Deut. vi. 13. [d] Isa. ix. 1–2.

OF JESUS (*continued*).

Luke iv.

And he *led* him to *Jerusalem*,
and set him on the pinnacle of the temple,
and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God,
10 cast thyself down *from hence*: for it is written,
'He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, *to guard thee*':
11 and, 'On their hands they shall bear thee up,
Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.' [a]
12 And Jesus *answering* said unto him, It is said,
'Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.' [b]
5 And he *led* him *up*,
and shewed him all the kingdoms of the world *in a moment of time.*
6 And the devil said unto him, To thee will I give all this *authority*,
and the glory of them:
for it hath been delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it.
7 If thou therefore wilt worship *before* me, *it shall all be thine.*
8 And Jesus *answered* and said unto him,
It is written, 'Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,
and him only shalt thou serve.' [c]
13 And *when* the devil *had completed every temptation* he departed from him *for a season.*

Cf. Matt. xvi.
23 . . . Get thee behind me, Satan . . .

IN GALILEE.

Luke iv.

14 And Jesus returned *in the power of the Spirit*
into Galilee:
and a fame went out concerning him through all the region
15 *round about.* | *And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.*

Cf. Matt. iii.

2 Repent ye;
for the kingdom of *heaven* is at hand.

THE FIRST APOSTLES.

Luke v.

Cf. John i. 35–51.

1 *Now it came to pass, while the multitude pressed upon him*
and heard the word of God, that he was *standing* by the lake
2 of *Gennesaret*; | and he saw *two boats standing by the lake:*
but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing
3 *their nets.* | *And he entered into one of the boats, which was*
Simon's, *and asked him to put out a little from the land.*
And he sat down and taught the multitudes out of the boat.
4 *And when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out*
5 *into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.* | *And*
Simon answered and said, Master, we toiled all night, and
6 *took nothing: but at thy word I will let down the nets.* | *And*
when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of
7 *fishes;* | *and their nets were breaking; and they beckoned unto*
their partners in the other boat, that they should come and
help them. | *And they came, and filled both the boats, so that*
8 *they began to sink.* | *But Simon Peter, when he saw it, fell*
down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a

§ 7. THE CALL OF THE

Mark i.

casting a net into the sea;
for they were fishers.
17 And Jesus said unto them,
Come ye after me,
and I will make you *to become* fishers of men.
18 And straightway they left the nets,
and followed him.
19 And going on *a little further*,
he saw James the son of Zebedee,
and John his brother,
who also were in the boat
mending the nets.
20 And *straightway* he called them:
and they left their father Zebedee in the boat
with the hired servants,
and went after him.

Matt. iv.

casting a net into the sea;
for they were fishers.
19 And he saith unto them,
Come ye after me,
and I will make you fishers of men.
20 And they straightway left the nets,
and followed him.
21 And going on *from thence*
he saw *other two brethren*, James the son of Zebedee,
and John his brother,
in the boat *with Zebedee their father*,
mending their nets;
and he called them.
22 And they *straightway* left the boat and their father,

and followed him.

§ 8. AN UNCLEAN SPIRIT CAST

Mark i.

21 And they go into Capernaum;

and *straightway* on the sabbath day
he *entered into the synagogue* and taught.
22 And they were astonished at his teaching:
for he taught them as having authority,
and not as the scribes.
23 And *straightway* there was in their synagogue
a man with an unclean spirit;
24 And he cried out, saying,
What have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth?
art thou come to destroy us?
I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.
25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying,
Hold thy peace, and come out of him.
26 And the *unclean spirit, tearing him*
and crying with a loud voice,
came out of him.
27 And they were all amazed,
insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying,
What is this? *a new teaching!*
with authority he commandeth *even* the unclean spirits,
and they *obey him*.
28 And the report of him went out *straightway* everywhere
into all the region *of Galilee* round about.

§ 9. SIMON'S WIFE'S MOTHER

Mark i.

29 And *straightway, when they were come out* of the synagogue,
they came into the house of Simon *and Andrew*,
with James and John.
30 Now Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever;
and *straightway* they *tell* him *of* her:
and he came and *took her by* the hand, *and raised her up*;
and the fever left her,
and she ministered unto them

Matt. viii.

14 And when Jesus was come into *Peter's* house,

he saw his wife's mother lying sick of a fever.

15 And he *touched* her hand,
and the fever left her;
and she arose, and ministered unto *him*.

FIRST APOSTLES (*continued*).

Luke v.

9 *sinful man, O Lord.* | *For he was amazed, and all that were*
with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken;
10b And Jesus said *unto Simon,*
Fear not;
from henceforth thou shall catch men.
11 And *when they had brought their boats to land,* they left *all,*
and followed him.

10a *and so were also* James and John, sons of Zebedee,
which were partners with Simon.

OUT AT CAPERNAUM.

Luke iv.

31 And he came *down* to Capernaum, *a city of Galilee.*

And he was teaching them on the sabbath day:

32 and they were astonished at his teaching;
for *his word was with* authority.

33 And in the synagogue there was
a man, which had a spirit *of an* unclean *devil*;
and he cried out *with a loud voice,*
34 *Ah!* what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth?
art thou come to destroy us?
I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.
35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying,
Hold thy peace, and come out of him.
And when the *devil had thrown him down in the midst,*
33b . . . and he cried out with a loud voice . . .]
he came out of him, *having done him no hurt.*
36 And amazement came upon all,
and they spake together, one with another, saying,
What is this *word*?
for with authority *and power* he commandeth the unclean spirits,
and they *come out.*
37 And there went forth a rumour concerning him
into every place of the region round about.

Matt. iv.

13b . . . he came *and dwelt* in Capernaum, *which is by the sea,*
in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali . . .

Matt. vii.

28 *And it came to pass, when Jesus ended these words,*
the multitudes were astonished at his teaching:
29 for he taught them as one having authority,
and not as their scribes.

Matt. iv.

24 And the report of him went forth
into all *Syria* : . . .
and they brought unto him all that were sick, holden with
divers diseases and torments, possessed with devils, and
25 *epileptic, and palsied; and he healed them.* | *And there*
followed him great multitudes from Galilee and Decapolis
and Jerusalem and Judaea and from beyond Jordan.

CURED OF A FEVER.

Luke iv.

38 And *he rose up* from the synagogue,
and entered into the house of Simon.

And Simon's wife's mother was *holden* with a *great* fever;
and they *besought* him *for* her.
39 And he *stood over* her, and *rebuked the fever*;
and it left her:
and *immediately* she rose up and ministered unto them.

§ 10. HEALING IN

Mark i.

32 And *at* even, when the sun *did set*,
they brought unto him all that were sick,
and *them that were* possessed with devils.
33 *And all the city was gathered together at the door.*
34 And he healed *many* that were sick with divers diseases,
and cast out many devils;

and he suffered not the devils to speak,
because they knew him [1].

Matt. viii.

16 And when even *was come*,
they brought unto him
many possessed with devils:

and he cast out *the spirits with a word*,
and healed *all* that were sick:

17 *that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying, 'Himself took our infirmities, and bare our diseases.'* [a]

§ 11. RETIREMENT BEFORE

Mark i.

35 And *in the morning, a great while before* day,
he *rose up* and went out,
and departed into a desert place,
and there prayed.
36 And *Simon and they that were with him*
37 followed after him; and they found him,
and *say unto him, All are seeking thee.*
38 And he saith unto them,
Let us go elsewhere into the *next towns*,
that I may preach there also;
for to this end *came I forth.*
39 And he went into their synagogues
throughout all Galilee,
preaching, and *casting out devils.*

Matt. iv.

23 And Jesus went about in all Galilee,
teaching in their synagogues,
and preaching the gospel of the kingdom,
and healing all manner of disease
and all manner of sickness among the people.

§ 12. THE CLEANSING

Mark i.

40 And there cometh to him a leper,
beseeching him, [2] and *kneeling down to him*,
and saying unto him,
If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.
41 And *being moved with compassion*,
he stretched forth his hand, and touched him,
and saith unto him, I will; be thou made clean.
42 And straightway the leprosy departed from him,
and he was made clean.
43 And he *strictly charged* [b] him,
and straightway sent him out,
44 and saith unto him,
See thou *say nothing* to any man:
but go thy way, 'shew thyself to the priest,' [c]
and offer for thy cleansing
the *things* which Moses commanded,
for a testimony unto them.
45 *But he went out, and began to publish it much,*
and to spread abroad the *matter*,
insomuch that *Jesus could no more openly enter into a city*,
but *was without* in desert places:
and they came to him *from every quarter.*

Matt. viii.

1 *And when he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.*
2 And behold, there came to him a leper
and *worshipped* him,
saying,
Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.
3 And
he stretched forth his hand, and touched him,
saying, I will; be thou made clean.
And straightway his leprosy
was cleansed.
4 And Jesus

saith unto him,
See thou tell no man;
but go thy way, 'shew thyself to the priest,' [c]
and offer
the *gift* that Moses commanded,
for a testimony unto them.

[a] Isa. liii. 4. [b] ἐμβριμησάμενος, Mark: παρήγγειλεν, Luke. [c] Lev. xiii. 49.

THE EVENING.

Luke iv.

40 And when the sun *was setting*,
all they that had any sick *with divers diseases* brought them unto him;

and he laid his hands on every one of them,
and healed them. [34 . . . with divers diseases . . .]
41 And devils also *came* out from many,
crying out, and saying, Thou art the Son of God.
And *rebuking them*, he suffered them not to speak,
because they knew *that he was the Christ.*

FRESH PREACHING.

Luke iv.

42 And *when it was* day,
he came out
and went into a desert place:

and *the multitudes*
sought after him, and came unto him,
and *would have stayed him, that he should not go from them.*
43 But he said unto them,
I must preach *the good tidings of the kingdom of God*
to the *other cities* also:
for therefore *was I sent.*
44 And he was preaching
in the synagogues of Galilee.
[43 . . . preach the good tidings of the kingdom *of God* . . .]

Matt. ix.

35 And Jesus went about all *the cities and the villages*,
teaching in their synagogues,
and preaching the gospel of the kingdom,
and healing all manner of disease
and all manner of sickness.

OF A LEPER.

Luke v.

12 *And it came to pass, while he was in one of the cities,*

behold, a man *full of leprosy:*
and *when he saw Jesus*, he *fell on his face*, and besought him,
saying,
Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.
13 And
he stretched forth his hand, and touched him,
saying, I will; be thou made clean.
And straightway the leprosy departed from him.

14 And he *charged* [b] him

to tell no man:
but go thy way, and 'shew thyself to the priest,' [c]
and offer for thy cleansing,
according as Moses commanded,
for a testimony unto them.
15 But *so much the more*
went abroad the *report concerning him:*
and *great multitudes* came together
to hear, and to be healed of their infirmities.
16 But he *withdrew himself* into the deserts,
and prayed.

[1] M. *add* to be Christ.

[2] M. *omit* and kneeling down to him.

§ 13. THE HEALING

Mark ii.

1 *And when he entered again into Capernaum after some*
2 *days, it was noised that he was in the house.* | *And many*
were gathered together, so that there was no longer room
for them, no, not even about the door: and he spake the
word unto them.
3 And they come, bringing unto him
a man sick of the palsy, *borne of four.*

4 And when they *could not* [1] *come nigh unto him*
for the crowd,
they *uncovered the roof where he was:*
and *when they had broken it up,*
they let down the *bed* [a] whereon the sick of the palsy lay.
5 And Jesus seeing their faith
saith unto the sick of the palsy,
Son, thy sins are forgiven.
6 But there were certain of the scribes sitting there,
and reasoning in their *hearts,*
7 *Why* doth this man thus speak? he blasphemeth:
who can forgive sins but one, even God?
8 And *straightway* Jesus, perceiving *in his spirit*
that they so reasoned within themselves,
saith unto them,
Why reason ye these things in your hearts?
9 Whether is easier,
to say *to the sick of the palsy*, Thy sins are forgiven;
or to say, Arise, *and take up thy bed*, and walk?
10 But that ye may know that the Son of man
hath power on earth to forgive sins
11 (he saith to the sick of the palsy) | I say unto thee,
Arise, take up thy *bed* [a], and go unto thy house.
12 And he arose,
and straightway took up the *bed* [a],
and went forth before them all;
insomuch that they were all amazed,
and glorified God,
saying, *We never saw it on this fashion.*

Matt. ix.

1 *And he entered into a boat, and crossed over,*
and came into his own city.

2 And behold, they brought to him
a man sick of the palsy, *lying* on a bed [a]:

and Jesus seeing their faith
said unto the sick of the palsy,
Son, *be of good cheer*; thy sins are forgiven.
3 And *behold*, certain of the scribes
said within themselves,
This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus [5] *knowing*
their thoughts [[3] . . . within themselves . . .]
said,
Wherefore think ye *evil* in your hearts?
5 For whether is easier,
to say, Thy sins are forgiven;
or to say, Arise, and walk?
6 But that ye may know that the Son of man
hath power on earth to forgive sins
(then saith he to the sick of the palsy),
Arise, and take up thy *bed* [a], and go unto thy house.
7 And he arose,

and departed to his house.
8 But *when the multitudes saw it,*
they were afraid, and glorified God,
which had given such power unto men.

§ 14. THE CALL

Mark ii.

13 And he went forth *again by the sea side;*
and all the multitude resorted unto him,
and he taught them.
14 And as he passed by
he saw Levi *the son of Alphaeus*
sitting at the place of toll,
and he saith unto him, Follow me.
And he arose and followed him.
15 And it came to pass, that he was sitting at meat in his house,
and many publicans and sinners
sat down with Jesus and his disciples:
for there were many, and they followed him.
16 And the scribes [2] *of* the Pharisees,
when they saw *that he was eating with the sinners and publicans,*
said unto his disciples,
[3] He eateth [4] and drinketh with publicans and sinners.
17 And when Jesus heard it, he saith unto them,
They that are whole have no need of a physician,
but they that are sick:

I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

Matt. ix.

9 And as Jesus passed by *from thence,*
he saw a man, called *Matthew,*
sitting at the place of toll:
and he saith unto him, Follow me.
And he arose, and followed him.
10 And it came to pass, as he sat at meat in the house,
behold, many publicans and sinners
came and sat down with Jesus and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees
saw it,
they said unto his disciples,
Why eateth *your Master* with the publicans and sinners?
12 But when he heard it, he said,
They that are whole have no need of a physician,
but they that are sick.
13 *But go ye and learn what this meaneth.*
'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice:' [b]
for I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

[a] *κράβαττον*, Mark: *κλίνη*, Matt. and Luke v. 18: *κλινίδιον*, Luke v. 19, 24.

[b] Hos. vi. 6.

OF A PARALYTIC.

Luke v.

17 *And it came to pass on one of those days, that he was teaching; and there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every village of Galilee and Judaea and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was with him to heal.*
18 And behold, men bring
on a bed [a] a man that was *palsied*:
and they sought to bring him in, and to lay him before him.
19 And *not finding by what way* they might *bring him in*
because of the multitude,
they *went up to the house-top,*
and let him down *through the tiles*
with his *couch* [a] *into the midst before Jesus.*
20 And seeing their faith,
he said,
Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.
21 And the scribes *and the Pharisees* [17 . . . sitting by . . .]
began to reason, saying,
Who is this that speaketh blasphemies?
Who can forgive sins, but God alone?
22 But Jesus, perceiving
their reasonings,
answered and said unto them,
What reason ye in your hearts?
23 Whether is easier,
to say, Thy sins are forgiven thee;
or to say, Arise and walk?
24 But that ye may know that the Son of man
hath power on earth to forgive sins
(he said unto him that was *palsied*) I say unto thee,
Arise, and take up thy *couch* [a], and go unto thy house.
25 And immediately he rose up before them,
and took up *that whereon he lay,*
and departed to his house, *glorifying God.*
26 And amazement took hold on all,
and they glorified God; and they were filled with fear,
saying, *We have seen strange things to-day.*

Cf. Luke vii.

48 And he said unto her,
Thy sins are forgiven.
49 And they that sat at meat with him
began to say within themselves,
Who is this that even forgiveth sins?

Matt. xii. 25. And knowing their thoughts he said unto them,...
Luke vi. 8[a]. But he knew their thoughts; . . .
„ xi. 17[a]. But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them,...

OF LEVI.

Luke v.

27 And *after these things* he went forth,

and beheld a *publican,* named Levi,
sitting at the place of toll,
and said unto him, Follow me.
28 And he *forsook all,* and rose up, and followed him.
29 And *Levi made him a great feast* in his house:
and there was *a great multitude* of publicans and of *others*
that were sitting at meat with them.

30 And the Pharisees and [6] their scribes

murmured against his disciples, saying,
Why do *ye* eat and drink with the publicans and sinners?
31 And Jesus *answering* said unto them,
They that are whole have no need of a physician;
but they that are sick.

Matt. xii.

7[a] *But if ye had known what this meaneth,*
I desire mercy, and not sacrifice . . . [b]

32 I am not come to call the righteous but sinners
to repentance.

[1] M. bring him unto him. [2] M. and. [3] M. *add* How is it that . . . ? [4] M. *omit* and drinketh. [5] M. seeing.
[6] M. *or* the scribes among them.

Mark ii.	Matt. ix.
A.	
18 And John's disciples *and the Pharisees were fasting*: and they come and say unto him, Why do John's disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?	14 Then come to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast [1] oft, but thy disciples fast not?
19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the sons of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? *as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast.*	15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the sons of the bride-chamber *mourn*, as long as the bridegroom is with them?
20 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast in that day.	but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast.
B	
21 No man *seweth* a piece of undressed cloth on an old garment: else that which should fill it up taketh from it, *the new from the old*, and a worse rent is made.	16 And no man putteth a piece of undressed cloth upon an old garment; for that which should fill it up taketh from the garment, and a worse rent is made.
C.	
22 And no man putteth new wine into old wine-skins: else the wine will burst the skins, and the wine perisheth, and the skins: but they put new wine into fresh wine-skins.	17 Neither do men put new wine into old wine-skins: else the skins burst, and the wine is spilled, and the skins perish: but they put new wine into fresh wine-skins, *and both are preserved.*

§ 16. ON THE OBSERVANCE

Mark ii.	Matt. xii.
23 And it came to pass, that he was going on the sabbath day through the cornfields; and his disciples began, *as they went*, to pluck the ears of corn.	1 *At that season* Jesus went on the sabbath day through the cornfields; and his disciples *were an hungred*, and began to pluck ears of corn, and to eat.
24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do *they* on the sabbath day that which is not lawful?	2 But the Pharisees, *when they saw it*, said unto him, Behold, *thy disciples* do that which it is not lawful to do upon the sabbath.
25 And he said unto them, Did ye *never* read what David did, when he *had need*, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?	3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungred, and they that were with him;
26 How he entered into the house of God *when Abiathar was high priest*, and did eat the 'shewbread,' [a] which it is not lawful to eat save for the priests, and gave also to them that were with him?	4 how he entered into the house of God, and did eat the 'shewbread,' [a] which it *was* not lawful *for him* to eat, *neither for* them that were with him, but only for the priests?
	5 *Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath day the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are guiltless?* | *But I say unto you, that one greater than the temple is here.* | *But if ye had known what this meaneth, 'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice,'* [b] *ye would not have condemned the guiltless.*
27 And he said unto them. *The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:*	
28 *so that* the Son of man is lord *even* of the sabbath.	8 *For* the Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

[a] 1 Sam. xxi. 6.

[b] Hos. vi. 6.

FASTING.

Luke v.

[13] And they said unto him,
The disciples of John fast often, *and make supplications;*
likewise also the disciples of the Pharisees;
but thine *eat and drink.*
[34] And Jesus said unto them,
Can *ye make* the sons of the bride-chamber fast,
while the bridegroom is with them?

[35] But the days will come;
and when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them,
then will they fast in those days.
[36] *And he spake also a parable unto them;*
No man *rendeth a piece from a new garment,* and putteth it
upon an old garment;
else *he will rend the new,* and also the
piece from the new *will not agree with* the old.

[37] And no man putteth new wine
into old wine-skins;
else the new wine will burst the skins,
and itself will be spilled, and the skins will perish.
[38] But new wine must be put into fresh wine-skins.

[39] *And no man having drunk old wine desireth*
new: for he saith, The old is good.

OF THE SABBATH.

Luke vi.

[1] Now it came to pass on a [2]sabbath,
that he was going through the cornfields;
and his disciples
plucked the ears of corn, and did eat,
rubbing them in their hands.
[2] But *certain* of the Pharisees said,
Why do *ye* that which it is not lawful to do on the
sabbath day?
[3] And Jesus *answering* them said,
Have ye not read *even this,* what David did,
when he was an hungred,
he, and they that were with him;
[4] how he entered into the house of God,

and did *take* and eat the 'shewbread,' [a]
and gave also to them that were with him;
which it is not lawful to eat
save for the priests alone?

Matt. ix.

[13] *But go ye and learn what this meaneth, 'I desire mercy, and*
not sacrifice:' [b] *for I came not to call the righteous, but*
sinners.

[5] And he said unto them,

The Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

M. *omit* oft.

[2] M. *add* second-first.

§ 17. THE MAN WITH

Mark iii.

1 And he entered *again* into the synagogue;
and there was a man there
which had his hand withered.
2 And they watched him,
whether he would heal him on the sabbath day;
that they might accuse him.

And he saith unto the man that had his hand withered,
3 Stand forth.

4 And he said unto them,

Is it lawful on the sabbath day
to do good, or to do harm?
to save a life, or to *kill*?
But they held their peace.
5 And when he had looked round about on them
with anger, being grieved at the hardening of their heart,
he saith unto the man,
Stretch forth thy hand.
And he stretched it forth:
and his hand was restored.
6 And the Pharisees went out, and *straightway*
with the Herodians took counsel against him,
how they might destroy him.

Matt. xii.

9 And he *departed thence,* and went into their synagogue:
and *behold,* a man
having a withered hand.
10 And they *asked* him, saying,
Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?
that they might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them,
What man shall there be of you, that shall have one sheep,
and if this fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay
12 *hold on it, and lift it out? | How much then is a man of*
more value than a sheep!
Wherefore it is lawful to do good on the sabbath day.

13 *Then* saith he to the man,
Stretch forth thy hand.
And he stretched it forth;
and it was restored *whole, as the other.*
14 But the Pharisees went out,
and took counsel against him,
how they might destroy him.

§ 18. MANY MIRACLES

Mark iii.

7 And Jesus with his disciples
withdrew *to the sea*:
and a great multitude *from Galilee* followed:
8 and from Judaea, and from Jerusalem,
and from Idumaea, and beyond Jordan,
and about Tyre and Sidon,
a great multitude, *hearing what great things he did,*
came unto him.
9 *And he spake to his disciples, that a little boat should wait*
on him because of the crowd, lest they should throng him:
for he *had* healed *many;*
10 *insomuch that as many as had plagues*
pressed upon him that they might touch him.
11 And the unclean spirits,
whensoever they beheld him, fell down before him, and cried,
saying, Thou art the Son of God.
12 And he charged them *much*
that they should not make him known.

Matt. xii.

15 And Jesus *perceiving it*
withdrew *from thence*:
and many followed him;

and he healed them *all,*

16 and charged them
that they should not make him known:
17 *that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the*
prophet, saying,
18 '*Behold, my servant whom I have chosen;*
My beloved in whom my soul is well pleased:
I will put my Spirit upon him,
And he shall declare judgement to the Gentiles.
19 *He shall not strive, nor cry aloud;*
Neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets.
20 *A bruised reed shall he not break,*
And smoking flax shall he not quench,
Till he send forth judgement unto victory.
21 *And in his name shall the Gentiles hope.*'[a]

[a] Isa. xlii. 1-4, xli. 8 f.

WITHERED HAND.

Luke vi.

6 And *it came to pass on another sabbath,*
that he entered into the synagogue *and taught* :
and there was a man there,
and his *right* hand was withered.
7 And *the scribes and the Pharisees* watched him,
whether he would heal on the sabbath ;
that they might *find how to* accuse him.
8 *But he knew their thoughts ;*
and he said to the man that had his hand withered,
Rise up, and stand forth *in the midst.*
And he arose and stood forth.
9 And Jesus said unto them, *I ask you,*

is it lawful on the sabbath
to do good, or to do harm ?
to save a life, or to *destroy* it ?

10 And he looked round about on them *all,*

and said unto him,
Stretch forth thy hand.
And he did so :
and his hand was restored.
11 But they *were filled with madness ;*
and *communed one with another*
what they might *do to Jesus.*

Cf. Luke xiv.

5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have [1] an ass or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw him up on a sabbath day ?

Cf. Luke xiii.

15b . . . Ye hypocrites, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering ?

OF HEALING.

Luke vi.

17 and he *came down* with them,
and *stood on a level place,*
and a great multitude *of his disciples,*
and a great number of the people
from *all* Judaea and Jerusalem,
and the *sea coast* of Tyre and Sidon,
which came *to hear* him,

and *to be* healed *of their diseases ;*
18 and *they that were troubled with* unclean spirits *were healed.*
19 *And all the multitude sought* to touch him :
for power came forth from him, and healed them all.

Cf. Luke v.

3 And he entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and asked him to put out a little from the land. And he sat down and taught the multitudes out of the boat.

Cf. Luke iv.

41a And devils also came out from many, crying out, and saying, Thou art the Son of God.

[1] M. a son.

§ 19. THE TWELVE

Mark iii.

13 And he goeth up into the mountain,

and calleth unto him *whom he himself would*:
and they went unto him.
14 And he *appointed* twelve,[1]
that they might be with him,
and that he might send them forth *to preach,*
15 and to have authority to cast out *devils.*

16 and Simon he *surnamed* Peter;

17 and James the son of Zebedee,
and John the brother of James;
and them he surnamed Boanerges, which is, Sons of thunder:
18 and Andrew,
and Philip,
and Bartholomew,
and Matthew,
and Thomas,
and James the son of Alphaeus,
and Thaddaeus,
and Simon the [2] Cananaean,
19 and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.

Matt. x.

1a And he called unto him his *twelve* disciples,

2a Now *the names* of the twelve apostles *are* these:

5a These twelve Jesus sent forth,
1b and gave them authority *over unclean spirits,* to cast them out,
and to heal all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.
2b *The first,* Simon, who *is called* Peter,
and Andrew his brother;
James the son of Zebedee,
and John his brother;

[. . . and Andrew . . .]
3 Philip,
and Bartholomew;
Thomas,
and Matthew *the publican*;
James the son of Alphaeus,
and Thaddaeus;
4 Simon the [2] Cananaean,
and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

§ 20. 'SATAN DIVIDED'

Mark iii.

20 *And he cometh into a house.* | *And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.*
21 *And when his friends heard it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.*

22 And the *scribes which came down from Jerusalem* said,
He hath Beelzebub, and, By the prince of the devils
casteth he out the devils.

23 And he *called them unto him,*
and said unto them *in parables,*
How can Satan cast out Satan?
24 And if a kingdom be divided against itself,
that kingdom *cannot stand.*
25 And if a house be divided against itself,
that house will not *be able* to stand.
26 And if Satan *hath risen up against* himself,
and is divided,
he cannot stand, but *hath an end.*

27 But *no one can* enter into the house of the strong man,
and spoil his goods,
except he first bind the strong man;
and then he will spoil his house.

Matt. xii.

22 *Then was brought unto him*
one possessed with a devil, *blind* and dumb;
and *he healed him, insomuch* that
the dumb man spake *and saw.*
23 And *all* the multitudes *were amazed,*
and said, *Is this the son of David?*
24 But *when the Pharisees heard it,* they said,
This man doth not cast out devils,
but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

25 And knowing their thoughts
he said unto them,

Every kingdom divided against itself
is brought to desolation;
and every *city or* house divided against itself
shall not stand:
26 and if Satan *casteth out Satan,*
he is divided against himself;
how then shall his kingdom stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils,
by whom do your sons cast them out?
therefore shall they be your judges.
28 But if I by the *Spirit* of God cast out devils,
then is the kingdom of God come upon you.
29 Or *how can one* enter into the house of the strong man,
and spoil his goods,
except he first bind the strong man?
and then he will spoil his house.

30 He that is not with me is against me;
and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

APOSTLES.

Luke vi.

12 *And it came to pass in these days,*
that he went out into the mountain *to pray* ;
and he continued all night in prayer to God.
13 And *when it was day,* he called his disciples :

and he *chose* from them twelve, *whom also he named* apostles ;

Cf. Acts i.

14 Simon, whom he also *named* Peter,
and Andrew his brother,
and James
and John,

[. . . and Andrew . . .]
and Philip
and Bartholomew,
15 and Matthew
and Thomas,
and James the son of Alphaeus,
16 and Simon *which was called the Zealot,*
and *Judas the* [2]*son of James,*
and Judas Iscariot, which *was the traitor* ; . . .

13b both Peter

and John
and James

and Andrew,
Philip
and Thomas,
Bartholomew
and Matthew,
James the son of Alphaeus,
and Simon the Zealot,
and Judas the son of James.

AGAINST SATAN.'

Luke xi.

14 And *he was casting out*
a devil which was dumb.
And *it came to pass,* when the devil was *gone* out,
the dumb man spake ;
and the multitudes marvelled.

15 But *some of them* said,
By Beelzebub the prince of the devils
casteth he out devils.
16 *And others, tempting him, sought of him a sign from heaven.*
17 But he, knowing their thoughts,
said unto them,

Every kingdom divided against itself
is brought to desolation ;
and [4]a house divided against *a house*
falleth.
18 And if Satan also
is divided against himself,
how shall his kingdom stand ?
because ye say that I cast out devils by Beelzebub.
19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils,
by whom do your sons cast them out ?
therefore shall they be your judges.
20 But if I by the *finger* of God cast out devils,
then is the kingdom of God come upon you.
21 When the strong man *fully armed guardeth his own court,*
his goods *are in peace* ;
22 *but when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him his whole armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.*
23 He that is not with me is against me ;
and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

Matt. ix.

32 And *as they went forth, behold, there was brought to him*
a dumb *man possessed with* a devil.
34 And when the devil was *cast* out,
the dumb man spake :
and the multitudes marvelled, saying,
It was never so seen in Israel.
34 But *the Pharisees* said,
By the prince of the devils
casteth he out devils.

[1] M. *add* whom also he named apostles. [2] M. *or* Zealot. [3] M. *or* brother. [4] M. *or* house falleth upon house.

§ 21. ON THE SIN

Mark iii.

28 *Verily* I say unto you,
All their sins shall be forgiven unto *the sons of* men,
and their blasphemies
wherewith soever they shall blaspheme :
29 but *whosoever* shall blaspheme
against the *Holy* Spirit
hath *never* forgiveness,
but is guilty of an eternal sin :
30 *because they said,*
He hath an unclean spirit.

Matt. xii.

31 *Therefore* I say unto you,
Every sin and blasphemy
shall be forgiven unto men ;

but the blasphemy
against the Spirit
shall not be forgiven.

32 And whosoever shall speak a word
against the Son of man,
it shall be forgiven him ;
but whosoever shall *speak* against the Holy Spirit,
it shall not be forgiven him,
neither in this world, nor in that which is to come.

§ 22. JESUS' MOTHER

Mark iii.

31 And there come
his mother and his brethren ;
and, standing without,
they sent unto him, calling him.
32 And *a multitude was sitting about him* ;
and *they say* unto him, Behold,
thy mother and thy brethren without
seek for thee.
33 And he answereth them, and saith,
Who is my mother and my brethren ?
34 And *looking round on them which sat round about him,*
he saith,
Behold, my mother and my brethren !
35 For whosoever shall do the will of God,

the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

Matt. xii.

46 *While he was yet speaking to the multitudes,*
behold, his mother and his brethren
stood without,
seeking to speak to him.

47 And *one said* unto him, Behold,
thy mother and thy brethren stand without,
seeking *to speak* to thee.
48 But he answered and said *unto him that told him,*
Who is my mother ? and *who are* my brethren ?
49 And he *stretched forth his hand towards his disciples,*
and said,
Behold, my mother and my brethren !
50 For whosoever shall do the will of *my Father which is in*
heaven,
he is my brother, and sister, and mother.

§ 23. THE PARABLE

Mark iv.

1 *And again he began to teach*
by the sea side.
And there is gathered unto him a very great multitude,
so that he entered into a boat, and sat *in the sea* ;
and all the multitude *were by the sea on the land.*
2 And he *taught* them many things in parables,
and said unto them *in his teaching,*
3 *Hearken :*
Behold, the sower went forth to sow :
4 and *it came to pass,* as he sowed,
some seed fell by the way side,
and the birds came and devoured it.
5 And other fell on the rocky *ground,*
where it had not much earth ;
and straightway it sprang up,
because it had no deepness of earth :
6 and when the sun was risen, it was scorched ;
and because it had no root, it withered away.
7 And other fell *among* the thorns,
and the thorns grew up, and choked it,
and it yielded no fruit.
8 And others fell into the good ground,

Matt. xiii.

1 *On that day Jesus went out of the house,*
and sat by the sea side.
2 And there were gathered unto him great multitudes,
so that he entered into a boat, and sat ;
and all the multitude *stood on the beach.*
3 And he spake to them many things in parables,
saying,

Behold, the sower went forth to sow ;
4 and as he sowed,
some seeds fell by the way side,
and the birds came and devoured them :
5 and others fell upon the rocky *places,*
where they had not much earth :
and straightway they sprang up,
because they had no deepness of earth :
6 and when the sun was risen, they were scorched ,
and because they had no root, they withered away.
7 And others fell *upon* the thorns ;
and the thorns grew up, and choked them :

8 and others fell *upon* the good ground,

OF BLASPHEMY.

Luke xii.

Cf. Luke xi.

10 And every one who shall speak a word
against the Son of man,
it shall be forgiven him:
but unto him that *blasphemeth* against the Holy Spirit
it shall not be forgiven.

18b . . . because ye say that I cast out devils by Beelzebub.

AND BRETHREN.

Luke viii.

19 And there came to him
his mother and brethren,

and *they could not come to him for the crowd.*
20 And *it was told* him,
Thy mother and thy brethren stand without,
desiring to see thee.
21 But he answered and said unto them,

My mother and my brethren *are these*
which hear the word of God, and do it.

Cf. Luke xi.

27 And it came to pass, as he said these things, a certain
woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said
unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the
28 breasts which thou didst suck. | But he said, Yea rather,
blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

OF THE SOWER.

Luke viii.

4 And when a great multitude came together,
and they of every city resorted unto him,

he spake by *a* parable:

5 The sower went forth to sow *his seed*:
and as he sowed,
some fell by the way side;
and it was trodden under foot, and the birds *of heaven* devoured it.
6 And other fell on the rock;

and *as soon as it grew,*

it withered away, because it had no *moisture.*
7 And other fell *amidst* the thorns;
and the thorns grew *with it,* and choked it.

8 And other fell into the good ground,

Cf. John xii. 24.

Cf. James i. 11.

§ 23. THE PARABLE

Mark iv.

and yielded fruit, growing up *and increasing;*
and brought forth,
thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.
9 *And he said,*
Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Matt. xiii.

and yielded fruit,

some a hundredfold, *some* sixty, *some* thirty.

9 He that hath ears[1], let him hear.

§ 24. ON THE USE

Mark iv.

10 *And when he was alone,*
they that were about him with the twelve
asked of him the parables.
11 And he said unto them,
Unto you is given the mystery of the kingdom of God:

but unto them *that are without,*

all things are done in parables:
12 that 'seeing they may see, *and not perceive*;
and hearing they may hear, and not understand;

lest haply

they should turn again,
and *it should be forgiven* them.' [a]

Matt. xiii.

10 And the disciples *came,* and said unto him,
Why speakest thou unto them in parables?
11 And he *answered* and said unto them
Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of *heaven,*
but to them
it is not given.
12 *For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.*
13 *Therefore speak I to them* in parables;
because 'seeing they see not,
and hearing they hear *not, neither do* they understand.'
14 *And unto them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith,*
'By hearing ye shall hear, and shall in no wise understand;
And seeing ye shall see, and shall in no wise perceive:
15 *For this people's heart is waxed gross,*
And their ears are dull of hearing,
And their eyes they have closed;
Lest haply *they should perceive with their eyes,*
And hear with their ears,
And understand with their heart,
And should turn again,
And *I should heal* them.' [a]

§ 25. EXPLANATION OF THE

Mark iv.

13 *And he saith unto them,*
know ye not this parable?
and how shall ye know all the parables?
14 *The sower soweth* the word.
15 And these are they by the way side,
where the word is sown;
and when they have heard,
straightway cometh *Satan,*
and taketh away the word which hath been sown in them.

16 And these *in like manner* are they
that are sown upon the rocky places,
who, when they have heard the word,
straightway receive it with joy;
17 and they have no root in themselves,
but endure for a while;
then, when tribulation or persecution ariseth
because of the word, straightway they stumble.
18 And *others* are they that are sown among the thorns;
these are they that have heard the word,
19 and the cares of the world,
and the deceitfulness of riches,
and *the lusts of other things entering in,*
choke the word, and *it* becometh unfruitful.

Matt. xiii.

18 *Hear then ye* the parable *of the sower.*

19 When *any one* heareth the word of *the kingdom,*
and understandeth it not,
then cometh the *evil one,*
and *snatcheth* away that which hath been sown in *his* heart.
This is *he that was sown* by the way side.

20 And *he*
that was sown upon the rocky places,
that is *he* that heareth the word,
and straightway with joy receiveth it;
21 yet hath *he* not root in himself,
but endureth for a while;
and when tribulation or persecution ariseth
because of the word, straightway *he* stumbleth.
22 And *he* that was sown among the thorns,
this is *he* that heareth the word;
and the care of the world,
and the deceitfulness of riches,

choke the word, and *he* becometh unfruitful.

[a] Isa. vi. 9-10: cf. John xii. 40; Acts xxviii. 26-27.

F THE SOWER (*continued*).

Luke viii.

and grew,
and brought forth *fruit*
a hundredfold.
As he said these things, he cried,
He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

F PARABLES.

Luke viii.

And his disciples asked him
what this parable *might be.*
And he said,
Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom
of God:
but to *the rest*

in parables;
that 'seeing they may *not* see, Cf. John xii. 39–40.
and hearing they may not understand.' [a]

ARABLE OF THE SOWER.

Luke viii.

[1] *Now* the parable *is this*:

The seed is the word of *God.*
[2] And those by the way side

are they that have heard;
then cometh *the devil,*
and taketh away the word from their heart,
that they may not believe and be saved.
[3] And those
on the rock are they
which, when they have heard,
receive the word with joy;
and these have no root,
which for a while *believe,*
and *in time of temptation*
fall away.
[4] And that which *fell* among the thorns,
these are they that have heard,
and *as they go on their way* they are choked with cares
and riches
and *pleasures of this life,*
and *bring no fruit to perfection.*

[1] M. *add* to hear.

§ 25. EXPLANATION OF THE

Mark iv.

20 And those are they that were sown upon the good ground;
such as
hear the word, and *accept* it,
and bear fruit,
thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.

Matt. xiii.

23 And *he* that was sown upon the good ground,
this is *he* that
heareth the word, and *understandeth* it;
who *verily* beareth fruit, and bringeth forth,
some a hundredfold, *some* sixty, *some* thirty.

§ 26. FIVE

Mark iv.

Matt. v, vi, vii, x, xi, xiii.

A.
21 *And he said unto them,*
Is the lamp *brought*
to be put under the bushel,
or under the bed,
and not *to be* put on the stand?

v. 15 Neither do men light a lamp,
and put it under the bushel,

but on the stand;
and it shineth unto all that are in the house.

B.
22 For there is nothing hid,
save that it *should* be manifested
neither *was* anything *made* secret,
but that it *should* come to light.

x. 26 . . . for there is nothing covered,
that shall not be revealed;
and hid,
that shall not be known.

C.
23 *If any man* hath ears to hear,
let him hear.

xi. 15 He that hath ears to hear,
let him hear.
xiii. 9 He that hath ears [1],
let him hear.
xiii. 43b He that hath ears [1],
let him hear.

D.
24 *And he saith unto them,*
Take heed *what* ye hear:
with what measure ye mete
it shall be measured unto you:
and *more* shall be given unto you.

vii. 2b . . . and with what measure ye mete,
it shall be measured unto you.
vi. 33b . . . and *all* these things shall be added unto you.

E.
25 For he that hath, to him shall be given:

xiii. 12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given,

and he that hath not,
from him shall be taken away
even that which he hath.

and he shall have abundance:
but whosoever hath not,
from him shall be taken away
even that which he hath.

§ 27. THE PARABLE OF THE

Mark iv.

26 *And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should*
27 *cast seed upon the earth; | and should sleep and rise night*
and day, and the seed should spring up and grow, he
28 *knoweth not how. | The earth beareth fruit of herself; first*
29 *the blade, then the ear, then the full corn in the ear. | But*
when the fruit is ripe, straightway he 'putteth forth the sickle,
because the harvest is come'.[a]

[a] Joel. iii. 13.

PARABLE OF THE SOWER (*continued*).

Luke viii.

15 And that in the good ground,
these are such as *in an honest and good heart*,
having heard the word, *hold* it *fast*,
and bring forth fruit *with patience*.

SHORT SAYINGS.

Luke viii.

16 And no man, *when he hath* lighted a lamp,
covereth it with a *vessel*,
or putteth it under a bed;
but putteth it on a stand,
that they which enter in may see the light.
17 For nothing is hid,
that shall not be made manifest;
nor anything secret,
that shall not be known and come to light.

18b . . . He that hath ears to hear,
let him hear.]

18 Take heed *therefore how* ye hear:

for whosoever hath, to him shall be given;

and whosoever hath not,
from him shall be taken away
even that which *he thinketh* he hath.

Luke xi, xii, xiv.

xi. 33 No man, *when he hath* lighted a lamp,
putteth it in a *cellar*,
neither under the bushel,
but on the stand,
that they which enter in may see the light.
xii. 2 But there is nothing covered up,
that shall not be revealed:
and hid,
that shall not be known.

xiv. 35b He that hath ears to hear,
let him hear.

Mark iv.

9 And he said, Who hath ears to hear,
let him hear.

Luke vi, xii.

vi. 38b For with what measure ye mete
it shall be measured to you *again*.
xii. 31b . . . and these things shall be added unto you.

Matt. xxv.	Luke xix.
	26 I *say unto you that*
29 *For* unto every one that hath	unto every one that hath
shall be given, *and he shall have abundance:*	shall be given;
but from him that hath not, even that which he hath	but from him that hath not, even that which he hath
shall be taken away.	shall be taken away from him.

SEED GROWING SECRETLY.

Cf. Matt. xiii.

24 *Another parable set he before them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man that sowed good seed in his*
25 *field: | but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares*
26 *also among the wheat, and went away. | But when the blade sprang up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares*
27 *also. | And the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field?*
28 *whence then hath it tares? | And he said unto them, An enemy hath done this. And the servants say unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? | But he saith,*
Nay; lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the
30 *wheat with them. | Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather up first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.*

1 M. *add* to hear.

§ 28. THE PARABLE OF

Mark iv.

30 And he said,
How shall we liken the kingdom of God ?
or in what parable shall we set it forth ?
31 It is like a grain of mustard seed,
which, *when it is* sown *upon the earth*,
though it be less than all the seeds *that are upon the earth*,
32 yet when it is *sown*, groweth up,
and becometh greater than *all* the herbs,
and *putteth out great branches* ;
so that 'the birds of the heaven' *can*
'lodge' *under the shadow* 'thereof'. [a]

33 And with *many such* parables
spake he *the word* unto them,
as they were able to hear it :
34 and without a parable spake he not unto them :
but privately to his own disciples
he expounded all things.

Matt. xiii.

31 *Another parable set he before them*, saying,
The kingdom of *heaven*

is like unto a grain of mustard seed,
which a man took, and sowed *in his field :*
32 which indeed is less than all seeds ;
but when it is grown,
it is greater than the herbs,
and becometh a tree,
so that 'the birds of the heaven' *come and*
'lodge in the branches thereof'.[a]

34 *All these things* spake Jesus in parables
unto *the multitudes ;*

and without a parable spake he *nothing* unto them :

35 *that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet,*
saying, 'I will open my mouth in parables ; I will utter
things hidden from the foundation of the world.' [b]

§ 29. THE STORM

Mark iv.

35 *And on that day, when even was come,*
he saith unto them,
Let us go over unto the other side.
36 And *leaving the multitude,*
they take him with them, even as he was,
in the boat.
And other boats were with him.
37 And there ariseth a great storm of wind,
and the waves *beat into* the boat,
insomuch that the boat was *now* filling.
38 And he himself was *in the stern,*
asleep *on the cushion* :
and they awake him
and say unto him, Master,
carest thou not that we perish ?
39 And he awoke, and rebuked the wind,
and *said* unto the sea, *Peace, be still.*
And *the wind* ceased, and there was a great calm.
40 And he said unto them,
Why are ye fearful ?
have ye not yet faith ?
41 And they feared *exceedingly,*
and said one to another,
Who then is this,
that even the wind and the sea obey him ?

Matt. viii.

18 *Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him,*
he *gave commandment*
to depart unto the other side.

23 And when he was entered
into a boat, his disciples *followed* him.

24 And *behold*, there arose a great *tempest* in the *sea*,
insomuch that the boat } *was covered with* the waves : }
but he
was asleep.
25 And they came to him, and awoke him,
saying, *Save, Lord ;*
we perish.
26b Then he *arose*, and rebuked the winds
and the sea ;
and there was a great calm.
26a And he saith unto them,
Why are ye fearful,
O ye of little faith ?
27 And the men marvelled,
saying,
What manner of man is this,
that even the winds and the sea obey him ?

§ 30. THE GERASENE

Mark v.

A.
1 And they came to the other side *of the sea*,
into the country of the Gerasenes.
2 And when he was come *out of the boat,*
straightway there met him
out of the tombs a man with an *unclean spirit,*

3 who had his dwelling in the tombs :

Matt. viii.

28 And when he was come to the other side
into the country of the *Gadarenes,*

there met him
two possessed with devils, *coming forth* out of the tombs
exceeding fierce,

[a] Dan. iv. 12, 21 ; Ezek. xvii. 23.

[b] Ps. lxxviii. 2.

THE MUSTARD SEED.

Luke xiii.

18 He said *therefore*,
Unto what is the kingdom of God *like?*
and whereunto shall I liken it?
19 It is like unto a grain of mustard seed,
which a man took, and *cast into his own garden;*

and it grew,

and became a tree; }
and 'the birds of the heaven
lodged in the branches thereof'. [a]

ON THE LAKE.

Luke viii.

22a *Now it came to pass on one of those days,*
22c and he said unto them,
Let us go over unto the other side *of the lake:*
and *they launched forth.*
22b that he entered
into a boat, himself and his disciples;

23b and there *came down* a storm of wind on the *lake;*

and they were filling with water, *and were in jeopardy.*
23a But *as they sailed*
he fell asleep:
24 And they came to him, and awoke him,
saying, Master, *master,*
we perish.
And he awoke, and rebuked the wind,
and the *raging of the water:*
and *they* ceased, and there was a calm.
25 And he said unto them,

Where is your faith?
And being afraid they marvelled,
saying one to another,
Who then is this,
that *he commandeth* even the winds and the *water,*
and they obey him?

DEMONIAC.

Luke viii.

26 And they *arrived*
at the country of the [1]Gerasenes, *which is over against Galilee.*
27 And when he was come *forth upon the land,*
there met him
a certain man out of the *city,* who had devils;
and for a long time he had worn no clothes,
and abode *not in any house, but* in the tombs.

[1] M. *or* Gergesenes, *or* Gadarenes.

§ 80. THE GERASENE

Mark v.	Matt. viii.
and no man could *any more bind him*,	so that no man could *pass by that way*.
no, not with a chain;	
4 because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains,	
and *the chains had been rent* asunder by him,	
and the fetters broken in pieces:	
and no man had strength to tame him.	
5 *And always, night and day,*	
in the tombs and in the mountains,	
he was crying out, and cutting himself with stones.	
6 And when he saw Jesus *from afar*,	
he *ran* and *worshipped* him;	
7 and crying out with a loud voice, he saith,	29 And behold, *they* cried out, saying,
What have I to do with thee,	What have *we* to do with thee,
Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God?	thou Son of God?
I *adjure* thee *by God*, torment me not.	*art thou come hither to* torment *us before the time?*
8 For he *said* unto him,	
Come forth, *thou* unclean spirit, out of the man.	
9 And he asked him, What is thy name?	
And he saith unto him, *My name is* Legion;	
for *we are* many.	
10 And *he* besought him *much*	
that he would not *send them away out of the country*.	
B.	
11 Now there was there on the mountain *side*	30 Now there was *afar off from them*
a *great* herd of swine feeding.	a herd of many swine feeding.
12 And they besought him, saying,	31 And *the devils* besought him, saying,
	If thou cast us out,
Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.	send us *away* into the *herd* of swine.
13 And he gave them leave.	32 And he *said unto them, Go*.
And the *unclean spirits* came out,	And they came out,
and entered into the swine:	and went into the swine:
and the herd rushed down the steep into the sea,	and *behold*, the *whole* herd rushed down the steep into the sea
in number about two thousand:	
and they were choked in the *sea*.	and *perished* in the *waters*.
C.	
14 And they that fed them fled,	33a And they that fed them fled,
and told it in the city, and in the country.	and *went away* into the city, and told *everything*,
And they came to see what it was that had come to pass.	
15 And they come to Jesus,	34a And *behold, all the city* came out to *meet* Jesus:
and *behold* him *that was possessed with devils*	and when they *saw* him,
sitting, clothed and in his right mind,	
even him that had the legion:	
and they were afraid.	
16 And they that saw it *declared* unto them	
how it befell him that was possessed with devils,	33b and *what* was befallen unto *them* that were possessed with devils.
and concerning the swine.	
17 And they *began* to beseech him	34b they besought him
to depart from their borders.	that he would depart from their borders.
D.	
18 And *as* he was entering into *the* boat,	
he *that had been possessed with* devils	
besought him that he might be with him.	
19 And he *suffered him not*, but saith unto him,	
Go to thy house *unto thy friends*,	
and *tell them* how great things *the Lord* hath done for thee,	
and how he had mercy on thee.	
20 And he went his way, and *began* to publish in *Decapolis*	
how great things Jesus had done for him:	
and all men did marvel.	

DEMONIAC (*continued*).

Luke viii.

29b For oftentimes *it had seized him*: and he was
kept under guard, and bound with chains and fetters;
and *breaking the bands* asunder,

he was driven of the devil into the deserts.

28 And when he saw Jesus,
he cried out, and *fell down before* him,
and with a loud voice said,
What have I to do with thee,
Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God?
I *beseech* thee, torment me not.
29a For he *commanded*
the unclean spirit to come out from the man.
30 And Jesus asked him, What is thy name?
And he said, Legion;
for many *devils were entered into him.*
31 And *they* intreated him
that he would not *command them to depart into the abyss.*

32 Now there was there a herd of many swine
feeding on the mountain:
and they intreated him

that he would *give them leave* to enter into them.
And he gave them leave.
33 And *the devils* came out *from the man*,
and entered into the swine:
and the herd rushed down the steep into the *lake*,

and were choked.

34 And *when* they that fed them *saw what had come to pass*, they fled,
and told it in the city and in the country.
35 And they went *out* to see what had come to pass;
and they came to Jesus,
and *found* the man, *from whom the devils were gone out*,
sitting, clothed and in his right mind,
at the feet of Jesus:
and they were afraid.
36 And they that saw it *told* them
how he that was possessed with devils *was made whole.*

37 And *all the people of the country of the* [1]*Gerasenes round about*
asked him to depart from them;
for they were holden with great fear:

and he entered into *a* boat, *and returned.*
38 But the man *from whom* the devils *were gone out*
prayed him that he might be with him:
but he *sent him away*, saying,
39 *Return* to thy house,
and *declare* how great things *God* hath done for thee.

And he went his way, publishing *throughout the whole city*
how great things Jesus had done for him.

Cf. Mark i.

24a And he cried out, saying,
What have we to do with thee,
thou Jesus of Nazareth?
art thou come to destroy us?

[1] M. *or* Gergesenes, *or* Gadarenes.

§ 31. JAÏRUS'S DAUGHTER, AND THE

	Mark v.	Matt. ix.
A.		
21	And when Jesus *had crossed over again in the boat unto the other side, a great* multitude *was gathered unto* him : *and he was by the sea.*	18 *While he spake these things unto them,*
22	And there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jaïrus by name ; and *seeing* him, he falleth at his feet,	behold, there came a ruler, and *worshipped* him
23	and beseecheth him *much*, saying, My *little* daughter is *at the point of death* : I *pray thee*, that thou come and lay thy hands on her, that she *may be made whole*, and live.	saying, My daughter is *even now dead* : but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she *shall* live.
24	And he went *with* him ; and a *great* multitude *followed him*, and they thronged him.	19 And Jesus *arose, and followed* him, *and so did his disciples.*
B.		
25	And a woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years,	20 And *behold*, a woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years,
26	and had *suffered many things of many* physicians, and had spent all *that she had*, and *was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,*	
27	*having heard the things concerning Jesus,* came *in the crowd* behind, and touched his garment.	came behind him, and touched the border of his garment :
28	For she said, If I touch but his garments, I shall be made whole.	21 for she said *within herself*, If I do but touch his garment, I shall be made whole.
29	And straightway the *fountain* of her blood *was dried up ; and she felt in her body that she was healed of her plague.*	
30	And *straightway* Jesus, perceiving *in himself* that *the* power *proceeding* from *him* had gone forth, turned him *about in the crowd*, and said, Who touched *my garments* ?	22 But Jesus turning
31	And *his disciples* said unto him, *Thou seest* the multitude *thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me ?*	
32	*And he looked round about to* see her *that had done this thing.*	and see*ing* her
33	But the woman *fearing* and trembling, *knowing what had been done to her*, came and fell down before him, and told him *all the truth.*	
34	And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole ; go in peace, *and be* whole *of thy plague.*	said, Daughter, *be of good cheer ;* thy faith hath made thee whole. *And the woman was made* whole *from that hour.*
C.		
35	While he yet spake, *they come* from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying, Thy daughter is dead : *why* troublest *thou* the Master *any further ?*	
36	But Jesus, [1] *not heeding the word spoken,* saith *unto the ruler of the synagogue,* Fear not, only believe.	
37	And he suffered no man to *follow* with him, save Peter, and James, and John *the brother of James.*	
38	And they come to the house of the ruler *of the synagogue* ; and he *beholdeth* a tumult, and *many* weeping and wailing *greatly.*	23 And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and *saw the flute-players, and the crowd making* a tumult,
39	And *when he was entered in*, he saith unto them, *Why make ye a tumult, and* weep ? the *child* is not dead, but sleepeth.	24 he said, *Give place* : for the *damsel* is not dead, but sleepeth.
40	And they laughed him to scorn. But he, having put *them all* forth, taketh the father of the *child* and her mother	And they laughed him to scorn. 25 But when *the crowd* was put forth,

WOMAN WITH AN ISSUE OF BLOOD.

Luke viii.

40 And as Jesus *returned*, the multitude *welcomed* him; *for they were all waiting for him.*

41 And behold, there came
a man named Jaïrus,
and he was a ruler of the synagogue:
and he fell down at Jesus' feet,
and besought him *to come into his house;*
42 for he had an *only* daughter, *about twelve years of age,*
and she *lay a dying.*

But as he went
the multitudes
thronged him.

43 And a woman
having an issue of blood twelve years,
which [2] had spent all *her living on* physicians,

and *could not be healed of any,*

44 came behind him,
and touched the border of his garment:

and immediately the *issue* of her blood *stanched.*

Cf. Mark vi.
56 . . . besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment . . .

45 And Jesus said,
Who is it that touched *me*?
And *when all denied, Peter* said, [3] *and they that were with him, Master,* the multitudes *press thee and crush thee.*

46 But Jesus said, *Some one did touch me*: for *I* perceived that power had gone forth from *me.*

47 And when the woman *saw that she was not hid,* she came trembling,

and falling down before him
declared *in the presence of all the people for what cause she touched him, and how she was healed immediately.*
48 And he said unto her,
Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole;
go in peace.

Cf. Mark vi. 50, x. 49 . . . Be of good cheer . . .
Cf. Mark x. 52 . . . thy faith hath made thee whole . . .
Cf. Luke vii. 50 . . . Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.
xvii. 19 . . . Arise, and go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

49 While he yet spake,
there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house,
saying, Thy daughter is dead;
trouble *not* the Master.
50 But Jesus *hearing it,*
answered *him,*
Fear not: only believe, *and she shall be made whole.*
51a And when he came to the house,
he suffered not any man to *enter in* with him,
save Peter, and John, and James, . . .

52 And *all* were weeping, and bewailing her:
but he said,
Weep *not*;
for *she* is not dead, but sleepeth.
53 And they laughed him to scorn, *knowing that she was dead.*
54a But he,
54b . . . and the father of the *maiden* and her mother.

[1] M. *or* overhearing. [2] M. *omit* had spent all her living on physicians, and. [3] M. *omit* and they that were with him

§ 31. JAÏRUS'S DAUGHTER, AND THE WOMAN

Mark v.

and them that were with him,
and goeth in *where the child was.*
41 And taking *the child* by the hand,
he saith unto her, *Talitha cumi;*
which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, Arise.
42 And straightway the damsel rose up, *and walked;*
for she was twelve years old.
And *they* were amazed *straightway*
with a great amazement.
43 And he charged them *that no man should know this:*
And he commanded
that something should be given her to eat.

Matt. ix.

he entered in,
and took her by the hand;

and the damsel arose.

26 And *the fame hereof went forth*
into all that land.

§ 32. JESUS VISITS HIS

Mark vi.

1 And
he went out from thence;
and he cometh into his own country;
and his disciples follow him.
2 And *when* the sabbath *was come,*
he *began* to teach in the synagogue:

Matt. xiii.

53 And *it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables*
he departed thence.
54a And coming into his own country

he taught them in their synagogue,

and *many hearing him* were astonished,

saying,
Whence hath this man these things?
and, *What* is the wisdom *that is given unto* this man,
and *what mean* such mighty works
wrought by his hands?
3 Is not this the carpenter,
the son of Mary,
and brother of James, and *Joses*, and Judas, and Simon?
and are not his sisters *here* with us?

and they were offended in him.
4 And Jesus said unto them,
A prophet is not without honour,
save in his own country, *and among his own kin,*
and in his own house.
5 And he *could* there do *no* mighty work,
save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk,
and healed them.
6a *And he marvelled* because of their unbelief.

insomuch that they were astonished,

and said,
56b Whence *then* hath this man *all* these things?
54b *Whence* hath this man this wisdom,
and these mighty works?

55 Is not this the carpenter's son? } *is not his mother called* Mary? }
and his brethren, James, and *Joseph*, and Simon, and Judas
56a And his sisters, are they not *all* with us?

57 And they were offended in him.
But Jesus said unto them,
A prophet is not without honour,
save in his own country,
and in his own house.
58 And he *did* not *many* mighty works there

because of their unbelief.

[a] Isa. lxi. 1-2.

[b] 1 Kings xvii. 9.

WITH AN ISSUE OF BLOOD (*continued*).

Luke viii.

41b taking her by the hand,
called, saying,
Maiden, arise.
55a And *her spirit returned*, and she rose up immediately:
42 . . . *about* twelve years of age . . .]
56 And *her parents* were amazed:

but he charged them *to tell no man what had been done.*
55b and he commanded
that something be given her to eat.

OWN COUNTRY.

Luke iv.

16 And

Cf. John iv. 43-45.

he came to *Nazareth, where he had been brought up:*

and he *entered, as his custom was,*
into the synagogue on the sabbath day,
17 *and stood up to read. | And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And he opened the book, and found the place where it was written,*
18 *'The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,*
Because he anointed me to preach good tidings to the poor:
He hath sent me to proclaim release to the captives,
And recovering of sight to the blind,
To set at liberty them that are bruised,
19 *To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.'* [a]
20 *And he closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant, and sat down: and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened*
21 *on him. | And he began to say unto them, To-day hath this scripture been fulfilled in your ears.*
22 And *all bare him witness*, and *wondered*
at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth:
and they said,

is not this *Joseph's* son?

Cf. John vi. 42.

23 *And he said unto them, Doubtless ye will say unto me this parable, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done at Capernaum, do also here in thine own country.*
24 And he said, *Verily I say unto you,*
No prophet is *acceptable*
in his own country.

Cf. John iv. 44

25 *But of a truth I say unto you, There were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when there came a great famine*
26 *over all the land; | and unto none of them was Elijah sent, but only 'to Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, unto a woman*
27 *that was a widow'.* [b] *| And there were many lepers in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was*
28 *cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian. | And they were all filled with wrath in the synagogue, as they heard these things; |*
29 *and they rose up, and cast him forth out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built,*
30 *that they might throw him down headlong. | But he passing through the midst of them went his way.*

§ 33. THE MISSION OF

Mark vi.	Matt. ix, x.
A.	
6b And he went round about the villages teaching.	35 And Jesus went about *all the cities* and the villages, teaching *in their synagogues,* *and preaching the gospel of the kingdom,* *and healing all manner of disease* *and all manner of sickness.* 36 *But when he saw the multitudes,* *he was moved with compassion for them,* *because they were distressed and scattered,* *'as sheep not having a shepherd.'* [a] 37 Then saith he to his *disciples,* The harvest *truly* is plenteous, but the labourers are few. 38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest.
B.	
7 And he called unto him the twelve, and *began* to send them forth by two and two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits;	x. 1a And he called unto him his twelve *disciples,* 5a *These twelve* Jesus sent forth, 1b and gave them authority over unclean spirits, *to cast them out,* and to heal *all manner* of disease *and a* *manner of sickness.*
8 and he charged them	5b and charged them, saying, *Go not into any way of the Gentiles, and enter not into an* 6 *city of the Samaritans: | but go rather to the lost sheep o* 7 *the house of Israel. | And as ye go,* preach, saying, The kingdom of *heaven is at hand.* 8 Heal the sick, *raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out devils: freely y* *received, freely give.*
that they should take nothing for their journey, *save* a staff *only*; no bread, no wallet, no money [b] in their purse [c]; 9 *but to go shod with sandals:* and, said he, *put not on* two coats.	10b for your journey, 10e nor staff: for the labourer is worthy of his *food.* 10a no wallet 9 Get you *no gold, nor silver,* nor brass [b] in your purses [c] 10d nor shoes, 10c neither two coats,
C.	
10 *And he said unto them,* Wheresoever ye enter into a house, there abide until ye depart thence.	11 And into whatsoever *city or village* ye shall enter, *search out who in it is worthy;* and there abide till ye *go forth.* 12 And *as* ye enter into the house, *salute t.*
	13 And if *the house be worthy, let* your peace come upon *it*: but if *it be not worthy, let* your peace return to you.
11 And whatsoever *place* shall not receive you, and they hear you not, as ye go forth thence, shake off the dust *that is under* your feet for a testimony *unto* them.	14 And *whosoever* shall not receive you, nor hear your *words,* as ye go forth *out of that house* or that city, shake off the dust *of* your feet.
	15 *Verily* I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable

[a] Num. xxvii. 17. : Ezek. xxxiv. 5. [b] χαλκόν, Mark and Matt. : ἀργύριον, Luke. [c] ζώνη, Mark and Matt. : βαλλάντιον, Luk

THE APOSTLES.

Matt. iv.

23 And Jesus went about in *all Galilee*,
teaching *in their synagogues*,
and preaching the gospel of the kingdom,
and healing all manner of disease
and all manner of sickness among the people.

Luke x.

2 And he said unto *them*,
The harvest is plenteous,
but the labourers are few:
pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest,
that he send forth labourers into his harvest.

Luke ix.

1a And he called the twelve *together*,
2a And he sent them forth

1 *Now after these things the Lord appointed seventy* 2 *others, and sent them* two and two *before his face into every city and place, whither he himself was about to come.*

1b and gave them *power* and authority over *all devils*,
and to cure diseases.

3a And he said unto them,

2b to preach the kingdom of *God*,
and to heal [1] the sick.

[9 . . . and heal the sick *that are therein*, and say unto them,
The kingdom of *God is come nigh unto you.*
11b . . . *howbeit, know this, that* the kingdom of *God is come nigh.*]

3 *Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves.*

3b Take nothing for your journey
neither staff,
3d nor bread,
3c nor wallet,
3e nor *money* [b];

neither *have* two coats.

[7b . . . for the labourer is worthy of his *hire*.]
4b no wallet,
4a Carry no *purse* [c],
4c no shoes:

and salute no man on the way.

4 And into whatsoever house ye enter,

there abide, *and* thence depart.

5 And into whatsoever house ye shall [3]enter, *first say, Peace be to this house.*
6 And if *a son of peace be there*, your peace *shall* rest upon *him*: but if not, it *shall* turn to you again.
7 *And in that same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire.*
8 *Go not from house to house.* | *And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before*
9 *you:* | *and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.*
10 But into whatsoever *city* ye shall enter, and *they* receive you not,

5 And *as many as* receive you not,

go out into the streets thereof and say,
11 *Even* the dust *from your city, that cleaveth to* our feet, we do *wipe off*
against you:
howbeit know this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh.
12 I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable

when ye depart from that city,
shake off the dust *from* your feet

for a testimony against them.

[1] M. *omit* the sick. [2] M. *add* and two. [3] M. *or* enter first, say.

§ 33. THE MISSION OF

Mark vi.

Matt. x.

for the land of Sodom and *Gomorrah*
in the day of *judgement*, than for that city.

12 And they went out,
and preached *that men should repent.*
13 *And they cast out many devils,*
and anointed with oil many that were sick,
and healed them.

§ 34. THE DEATH OF

A.

Mark vi.

Matt. xiv.

14 And *king* Herod heard thereof;
for his name had become known:
and [1] he said,
John the Baptist
is risen from the dead,
and therefore do these powers work in him.
15 But others said, *It is* Elijah.
And others said, *It is a prophet,*
even as one of the prophets.
16 But Herod, *when he heard thereof*, said,
John, *whom* I beheaded, *he is risen.*

1 *At that season* Herod the tetrarch heard
the report concerning Jesus,
2 and said *unto his servants,*
This is John the Baptist;
he is risen from the dead;
and therefore do these powers work in him.

B.

17 For Herod *himself had sent forth*
and laid hold upon John,
and bound him in prison
for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife:
for he had married her.
18 For John said unto Herod,
It is not lawful for thee to have *thy brother's wife.*
19 *And Herodias set herself against him,*
and desired to kill him; and *she could not*;
20 for Herod feared *John,*
knowing that he was a righteous man and a holy,
and kept him safe.
And when he heard him, he [2] was much perplexed;
and he heard him gladly.

3 For Herod
had laid hold on John,
and bound him, *and put him* in prison
for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife.

4 For John said unto him,
It is not lawful for thee to have *her.*

5 And when *he* would have put him to death,
he feared *the multitude,*
because they counted him as a prophet.

C.

21 And when *a convenient day* was come,
that Herod on his birthday *made a supper to his lords,*
and the high captains, and the chief men of Galilee;
22 And when [3] the daughter of Herodias *herself*
came in and danced,
she pleased Herod, *and them that sat at meat with him;*
and the king said unto the damsel,
Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt,
and I will give it thee.
23 And he *sware* unto her,
Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee,
unto the half of my kingdom.
24 And she *went out, and said unto* her mother,
What shall I ask? And she said,
The head of John the Baptist.
25 *And she came in straightway with haste*
unto the king, and asked, saying,
I will that thou forthwith give me in a charger
the head of John the Baptist.
26 And the king was *exceeding sorry*;
but for the sake of his oaths,
and of them that sat at meat,
he would not reject her.
27 *And straightway the king* sent *forth a soldier of his guard,*
and commanded *to bring his head:*
and he *went* and beheaded him in the prison,

6 But when Herod's birthday came,

the daughter of Herodias
danced *in the midst,*
and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he *promised with an oath*
to give her whatsoever she should ask.

8 And she, *being put forward by* her mother,

saith,
Give me *here* in a charger
the head of John the Baptist.
9 And the king was *grieved*;
but for the sake of his oaths,
and of them which sat at meat with him,

he commanded *it to be given;*
10 and he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.

THE APOSTLES (*continued*).

Luke ix.

[6] And they departed, *and went throughout the villages,*
preaching *the gospel,*

and healing *everywhere.*

JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke ix.

[7] Now Herod the tetrarch heard
of all that was done:
and he *was much perplexed, because that it was said by some,*
that John
was risen from the dead;

[8] and by some, that Elijah *had appeared;*
and by others,
that one of the *old* prophets *was risen again.*
[9] And Herod said,
John I beheaded:
but who is this, about whom I hear such things?
And he sought to see him.

Luke x.

in *that* day for Sodom,
than for that city.

Cf. § 46 A.

Cf. Luke iii.

[18] *With many other exhortations therefore preached he good*
[19] *tidings unto the people;* | but Herod the tetrarch, being
reproved by him for Herodias his brother's wife, *and for*
[20] *all the evil things which Herod had done,* | *added yet this*
above all, that he shut up John in prison.

Cf. John iii. 24.

[7 . . . he was much perplexed . . .]

[1] M. they. [2] M. lid many things. [3] M. his daughter Herodias.

§ 34. THE DEATH OF

Mark vi.

28 and brought his head in a charger,
and gave it to the damsel;
and the damsel *gave* it to her mother.
29 And *when* his disciples *heard thereof*,
they came and took up his corpse,
and *laid it in a tomb*.

Matt. xiv.

11 And his head was brought in a charger,
and given to the damsel:
and she *brought* it to her mother.
12 And his disciples
came, and took up the corpse,
and *buried him;*
and they went and told Jesus.

§ 35. THE FEEDING OF

A.

Mark vi.

30 And the apostles *gather themselves together unto Jesus;*
and they told him *all* things,
whatsoever they had done,
and whatsoever they had taught.
31 *And he saith unto them,*
Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place,
and rest a while.
For there were many coming and going,
and they had no leisure so much as to eat.
32 And they went away in *the* boat
to a desert place apart.
33 And the people *saw them going,*
and many knew them,
and they *ran there together* on foot
from *all* the cities, *and outwent them.*
34 And he came forth and saw a great multitude,
and he had compassion on them,
because they were 'as sheep not having a shepherd': [a]
and he *began to teach them many things.*

Matt. xiv.

[12b . . . and they went
and told Jesus.]

13 *Now when Jesus heard it,* he withdrew from thence in *a* boat,
to a desert place apart:
and when the multitudes *heard* thereof,

they followed him on foot
from the cities.
14 And he came forth, and saw a great multitude,
and he had compassion on them,

and healed *their sick.*

B.

35 And when the day *was now far spent,*
his disciples came unto him, and said,
The place is desert, and the *day is now far spent:*
36 send them away, that they may go
into the country and villages round about,
and buy themselves *somewhat to eat.*
37 But he *answered* and said unto them,
Give ye them to eat.
And they say unto him,
Shall we go and buy *two hundred pennyworth of bread,*
and give them to eat?
38 *And he saith unto them,*
How many loaves have ye? Go and see.
And when they knew, they say,
Five, and two fishes.

15 And when *even was come,*
the disciples came to him, saying,
The place is desert, and the *time is already past;*
send the multitudes away, that they may go
into the villages,
and buy themselves *food.*
16 But Jesus said unto them,
They have no need to go away; give ye them to eat.
17 And they say unto him,

We have *here but* five loaves, and two fishes.
18 *And he said, Bring them hither to me.*

C.

39 And he commanded them *that all should* sit down
by companies upon the *green* grass.
40 And they sat down *in ranks,*
by hundreds, and by fifties.
41 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes,
and looking up to heaven, he blessed,
and brake *the loaves;* and he gave
to the disciples to set before them;
and the two fishes divided he among them all.
42 And they did all eat, and were filled.
43 And they took up
broken pieces, twelve basketfuls,
and also of the fishes.
44 And they that ate *the loaves* were five thousand men.

19 And he commanded *the multitudes to* sit down
on the grass;

and he took the five loaves, and the two fishes,
and looking up to heaven, he blessed,
and brake and gave
the loaves to the disciples, *and the disciples* to the multitudes.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled:
and they took up that which remained over
of the broken pieces, twelve baskets full.

21 And they that did eat were about five thousand men,
beside women and children.

[a] Num. xxvii. 17; Ezek. xxxiv. 5.

JOHN THE BAPTIST (*continued*).

THE FIVE THOUSAND.

Luke ix.

10 And the apostles, *when they were returned*,
declared unto him
what things they had done.

Cf. John vii. 1–14.

And he *took them*, and withdrew
apart to a *city called Bethsaida*.
11 But the multitudes *perceiving* it

followed him:

Matt. ix.

36 But when he saw the multitudes,
he *was moved with* compassion for them,
because they were *distressed and scattered*,
'as sheep not having a shepherd'.[a]

and he *welcomed them*,

and *spake to them of the kingdom of God*,
and *them that had need of healing* he healed.

12a And the day *began to wear away;*
and the *twelve* came, and said unto him,
12c for *we are here in* a desert place.
12b Send the multitude away, that they may go
into the villages and country round about,
and *lodge, and get victuals:*
13a But he said unto them,
Give ye them to eat.
And they said,
13c *except we should* go and buy *food for all this people.*

13b We have *no more than* five loaves and two fishes;

14b And he *said unto his disciples, Make them* sit down
in companies,
15 And they *did so, and made them all* sit down.
14c *about* fifty each.
16 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes,
and looking up to heaven, he blessed *them*,
and brake; and gave
to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eat, and were *all* filled:
and *there was taken* up that which remained over to them
of broken pieces, twelve baskets.

14a For they were about five thousand men.

§ 36. WALKING ON

Mark vi.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples
to enter into the boat,
and to go before him unto the other side
to Bethsaida,
while he *himself* sendeth the multitude away.
46 And after he had *taken leave* of them,
he *departed* into the mountain to pray.
47 And when even was come,
the boat was in the midst of the sea,
and he alone *on the land.*
48 And *seeing them* distressed *in rowing,*
for the wind was contrary *unto them,*
about the fourth watch of the night
he cometh unto them, walking on the sea;
and he would have passed by them:
49 but they, when they saw him walking on the sea,
supposed that it *was* an apparition,
and cried out:
50 for *they all saw him,* and were troubled.
But he straightway spake with them,
and saith unto them, Be of good cheer:
it is I; be not afraid.

51 And *he* went up unto them into the boat;
and the wind ceased:
and they *were sore amazed in themselves;*
52 *for they understood not concerning the loaves.*
but their heart was hardened.

Matt. xiv.

22 And straightway he constrained the disciples
to enter into the boat,
and to go before him unto the other side,

till he should send the multitudes away.
23 And after he had *sent* the multitudes *away,*
he *went up* into the mountain *apart* to pray:
and when even was come,
he was *there* alone.
24 But the boat was [2] *now* in the midst of the sea,
distressed *by the waves;*
for the wind was contrary.
25 And in the fourth watch of the night
he came unto them, walking upon the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking upon the sea,
they were troubled, *saying,*
It *is* an apparition;
and they cried out *for fear.*
27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them,
saying, Be of good cheer;
it is I; be not afraid.
28 *And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me*
29 *come unto thee upon the waters.* | *And he said, Come. And*
Peter went down from the boat, and walked upon the waters,
30 [3] *to come to Jesus.* | *But when he saw the wind* [4], *he was afraid;*
and beginning to sink, he cried out, saying, Lord, save me.
31 *And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and took*
hold of him, and saith unto him, O thou of little faith,
wherefore didst thou doubt?
32 And when *they* were gone up into the boat,
the wind ceased.
33 And they *that were in the boat*
worshipped him, saying,
Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

§ 37. HEALING AT

Mark vi.

53 And when they had [1] crossed over,
they came to the land unto Gennesaret,
and moored to the shore.
54 And when *they were come out of the boat,*
straightway the people knew him,
55 and *ran* round about that whole region,
and *began to carry about on their beds*
those that were sick,
where they heard he was.
56 *And wheresoever he entered,*
into villages, or into cities, or into the country,
they laid the sick in the market-places,
and besought him that they might touch
if it were but the border of his garment:
and as many as touched *him* were made whole.

Matt. xiv.

34 And when they had crossed over,
they came to the land, unto Gennesaret.

35 And when
the men of that place knew him,
they *sent* into all that region round about,
and *brought unto him,*
all that were sick;

36 and they besought him that they might *only* touch
the border of his garment:
and as many as touched were made whole.

§ 38. ON THE TRADITION

Mark vii.

1 And there are *gathered together* unto him the Pharisees,
and *certain of* the scribes, which had come from Jerusalem,
2 *and had seen that some of his disciples ate their bread with*
3 *defiled, that is, unwashen, hands.* | *For the Pharisees, and*
all the Jews, except they wash their hands diligently, eat not,
4 *holding the tradition of the elders:* | *and when they come*

Matt. xv.

1 Then there came to Jesus from Jerusalem Pharisees
and scribes,

THE WATER.

Cf. John vi. 15–21.

GENNESARET.

Cf. John vi. 22–25.

OF THE ELDERS.

Cf. Luke xi.

37 *Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to dine with him:*
38 *and he went in, and sat down to meat.* | *And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed*
39 *before dinner.* | *And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye*

[1] M. *or* crossed over to the land, they came unto Gennesaret.
[2] M. many furlongs distant from the land. [3] M. and came. M. *add* strong.

§ 38. ON THE TRADITION

Mark vii.

from the market-place, except they wash themselves, they eat not: and many other things there be which they have received to hold, washings of cups, and pots, and brasen vessels [1].

5 And the Pharisees and the scribes ask him,
Why *walk not* thy disciples
according to the tradition of the elders,
but eat their bread *with defiled hands?*
6 And he said unto them,
Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites,
as it is written,
'This people honoureth me with their lips,
But their heart is far from me.
7 But in vain do they worship me,
Teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men.' [a]
8 *Ye leave the commandment of God,*
and hold fast the tradition of men.
9 *And he said unto them,*
Full well do ye *reject* the commandment of God,
that ye may keep your tradition.
10 For *Moses* said, 'Honour thy father and thy mother;' [b]
and, 'He that speaketh evil of father or mother,
let him die the death:' [c]
11 but ye say,
If a man shall say to his father or his mother,
That wherewith thou mightest have been profited by
is *Corban, that is to say,* Given to God;
12 *ye no longer suffer him to do aught for*
his father *or his mother;*
13 making void the word of God *by* your tradition,

which ye have delivered:
and many such like things ye do.

Matt. xv.

saying,
2 Why do thy disciples *transgress*
the tradition of the elders?
for they *wash not their hands when* they eat bread.
3a And he *answered* and said unto them,
7 Ye hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you,
saying,
8 'This people honoureth me with their lips;
But their heart is far from me.
9 But in vain do they worship me,
Teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men.' [a]

3b *Why* do ye also *transgress* the commandment of God
because of your tradition?
4 For *God* said, 'Honour thy father and thy mother:' [b]
and, 'He that speaketh evil of father or mother,
let him die the death.' [c]
5 But ye say,
Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother,
That wherewith thou mightest have been profited by me
is given to God;
6 *he shall not honour*
his father [3].
And ye have made void the word of God *because of* you
tradition.

§ 39. ON

Mark vii.

14 And he called to him the multitude *again,*
and said unto them,
Hear *me all of you,* and understand:
15 There is *nothing from without* the man,
that going into *him can* defile him:
but the things which proceed out of the *man*
are those that defile the man [2].

17 And *when he was entered into the house from the multitude,*
his *disciples* asked of him the parable.
18 And he saith unto them,
Are ye *so* without understanding also?
Perceive ye not, that whatsoever *from without*
goeth into the *man, it cannot defile him;*
19 *because it goeth not into his heart,*
but into his belly, and *goeth* out into the draught?
This he said, making all meats clean.
20 *And he said,* that which proceedeth out of the *man,*

Matt. xv.

10 And he called to him the multitude,
and said unto them,
Hear, and understand:
11 Not that which entereth into the *mouth* }
defileth the man; }
but that which proceedeth out of the *mouth,*
this defileth the man.
12 *Then came the disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou*
that the Pharisees were offended, when they heard this
13 *saying?* | *But he answered and said, Every plant which my*
heavenly Father planted not, shall be rooted up.
14 *Let them alone: they are blind guides.*
And *if* the blind guide the blind,
both shall fall into a pit.
15 And *Peter answered* and said unto him,
Declare unto us the parable.
16 And he said,
Are ye also *even yet* without understanding?
17 Perceive ye not, that whatsoever
goeth into the *mouth*

passeth into the belly, and *is cast* out into the draught?

18 But the things which proceed out of the *mouth*

[a] Isa. xxix. 13. [b] Exod. xx. 12; Deut. v. 16. [c] Exod. xxi. 17.

OF THE ELDERS (*continued*).

Luke xi.

Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter; but
40 *your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness. | Ye*
foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside
41 *also? | Howbeit give for alms those things which are within;*
and behold, all things are clean unto you.

DEFILEMENT.

Luke vi.

39 *And he spake also a parable unto them,*
Can the blind guide the blind?
shall they not both fall into a pit?

[1] M. *add* and couches. [2] M. *add* [16] If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear. [3] M. *add* or his mother.

Mark vii.

that defileth the man.
21 For *from within*, out of the heart *of men*,
evil thoughts proceed,
22 fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries,
covetings, wickednesses, deceit, lasciviousness,
an evil eye, railing, *pride, foolishness*:
23 *all* these *evil* things *proceed from within*,
and defile the man.

Matt. xv.

come forth out of the heart; and they defile the man.
19 For out of the heart
come forth evil thoughts,
murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts,
false witness,
railings:
20 these are the things
which defile the man:
but to eat with unwashen hands
defileth not the man.

§ 40. THE SYROPHŒNICIAN

Mark vii.

24 And from thence he *arose*, and went away
into the *borders* of Tyre [1] and Sidon.
And he entered into a house,
and would have no man know it:
and he could not be hid.
25 *But straightway* a woman,
whose little daughter had an unclean spirit,
having heard of him, came
and *fell down at his feet.*
26 *Now the woman was a* [2] *Greek,*
a Syrophœnician by race.
And she *besought* him
that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 And he said unto her,
Let the children first be filled:
for it is not meet to take the children's bread
and cast it to the dogs.
28 But she *answered* and saith unto him,
Yea, Lord: even the dogs *under* the table
eat of the *children's* crumbs.
29 And he saith unto her,
For this saying go thy way;
the devil is gone out of thy daughter.
30 *And she went away unto her house,*
and found the child laid upon the bed,
and the devil gone out.

Matt. xv.

21 And Jesus went out thence, and *withdrew*
into the *parts* of Tyre and Sidon.

22 *And behold*, a *Canaanitish* woman

came *out from those borders,*
[25 . . . she came and *worshipped* him . . .]

and *cried, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David;*
my daughter is *grievously vexed* with a devil.
23 *But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came*
and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth
24 *after us.* | *But he answered and said, I was not sent but*
25 *unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.* | *But she came*
and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.
26 And he *answered* and said,

It is not meet to take the children's bread
and cast it to the dogs.
27 But she said,
Yea, Lord: for even the dogs
eat of the crumbs *which fall from their masters'* table.
28 Then Jesus *answered* and said unto her,
O woman, great is thy faith:
be it done unto thee even as thou wilt.

And her daughter was healed from that hour.

§ 41. THE DEAF MAN WITH AN

Mark vii.

31 And again he went out *from the borders of Tyre,*
and came *through Sidon*
unto the sea of Galilee,
through the midst of the borders of Decapolis.
32 *And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an*
impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to lay his
33 *hand upon him.* | *And he took him aside from the multitude*
privately, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spat, and
34 *touched his tongue;* | *and looking up to heaven, he sighed,*
35 *and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.* | *And*
his ears were opened, and the bond of his tongue was loosed,
36 *and he spake plain.* | *And he charged them that they should*
tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more
a great deal they published it.

Matt. xv.

29 And Jesus departed *thence,*
and came
nigh unto the sea of Galilee;
and he went up into the mountain, and sat there.
30 *And there came unto him great multitudes, having with them*
the lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and they
cast them down at his feet, and he healed them:

EFILEMENT (*continued*).

OMAN.

Cf. Matt. x.

6 . . . but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

IPEDIMENT IN HIS SPEECH.

Cf. § 45.

[1] M. *omit* and Sidon. [2] M. *or* Gentile.

Mark vii.

37 *And they were beyond measure astonished,*
saying, He hath done all things well:
he maketh even the deaf to hear,
and the dumb to speak.

Mark viii.

1 *In those days, when there was again a great multitude,*
and they had nothing to eat,
he called unto him his disciples,
and saith unto them,
2 I have compassion on the multitude,
because they continue with me now three days,
and have nothing to eat:
3 and *if* I send them away fasting *to their home,*
they *will* faint in the way;
and some of them are come from far.
4 And his disciples answered him,
Whence *shall one be able* to fill *these men*
with bread here in a desert place?
5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye?
And they said, Seven.
6 And he commandeth the multitude
to sit down on the ground:
and he took the seven loaves,
and having given thanks, he brake,
and gave to his disciples, *to set before them;*
and *they set them before* the multitude.
7 And *they had* a few small fishes:
and having blessed them, he commanded
to set these also before them.
8 And they did eat, and were filled:
and they took up, of broken pieces that remained over,

seven baskets.
9 And they were *about* four thousand:

and he sent *them* away.
10 And *straightway* he entered into the boat
with his disciples,
and came into the *parts of Dalmanutha.*

Mark viii.

11 And the Pharisees came *forth,*
and began to question with him,
seeking of him a sign from heaven,
tempting him.
12 And he *sighed deeply in his spirit,*
and saith,

Why doth this generation seek a sign?
verily I say unto you,
There shall no sign be given unto *this generation.*

§ 41. THE DEAF MAN WITH AN

Matt. xv.

31 *insomuch that the multitude wondered,*
when they saw
the dumb speaking, *the maimed whole,*
and the lame walking, and the blind seeing:
and they glorified the God of Israel.

§ 42. THE FEEDING OF

Matt. xv.

32 And Jesus called unto him his disciples,
and said,
I have compassion on the multitude,
because they continue with me now three days,
and have nothing to eat:
and I *would not* send them away fasting,
lest haply they faint in the way.

33 And the disciples say unto him,
Whence *should we have so many loaves*
in a desert place, as to fill *so great a multitude*?
34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye?
And they said, Seven, *and a few small fishes.*
35 And he commanded the multitude
to sit down on the ground;
36 and he took the seven loaves *and the fishes;*
and he gave thanks and brake,
and gave to the disciples,
and *the disciples to* the multitudes,
[34 . . . and a few small fishes . . .]

37 And they did *all* eat, and were filled:
and they took up that which remained over of the broken
pieces,
seven baskets *full.*
38 And they *that did eat* were four thousand *men, besides*
women and children.
39 And he sent away *the multitudes,*
and entered into the boat,

and came into the *borders of Magadan.*

§ 43. JESUS REFUSES

Matt. xvi.

1 And the Pharisees and *Sadducees* came,

and tempting him
asked him *to shew them* a sign from heaven.
2 But he answered
and said unto them,
[1 *When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the*
3 *heaven is red.* | *And in the morning, It will be foul weather*
to-day: for the heaven is red and lowering. Ye know how to
discern the face of the heaven; but ye cannot discern the
signs of the times.
4a An evil *and adulterous* generation seeketh after a sign;

and there shall no sign be given unto it,
but the sign of Jonah.

MPEDIMENT IN HIS SPEECH (*continued*).

HE FOUR THOUSAND.

TO GIVE A SIGN.

Luke xi.	Matt. xii.
16 And *others*,	38 Then certain of the *scribes* and Pharisees *answered* him, saying, *Master, we would see* a sign from *thee.*
tempting him, sought of him a sign from heaven.	
29 *And when the multitudes were gathering together unto him,* he *began* to say,	39 But he answered and said unto them,
This generation *is* an evil generation: it seeketh after a sign;	An evil *and adulterous* generation seeketh after a sign;
and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah.	and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah *the prophet:*
30 For even as Jonah *became a sign unto the Ninevites,*	40 for as Jonah *was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale;*
so shall also the Son of man be *to this generation.*	so shall the Son of man be *three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.*

[1] M. *omit to end of v.* 3.

§ 44. THE LEAVEN OF

Mark viii.

13 And he left them,
and *again entering into the boat* departed
to the other side.
14 And they forgot to take bread:
and they had not in the boat with them
more than one loaf.
15 And he *charged* them, saying,
Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees
and *the leaven of Herod.*
16 And they reasoned *one with another*, saying,
We *have* no bread.
17 And Jesus perceiving it saith unto them,
Why reason ye because ye have no bread?
do ye not yet perceive, *neither understand?*
have ye your heart hardened?
18 '*Having eyes, see ye not?*
and having ears, hear ye not?'[a]
and do ye not remember?
19 *When I brake* the five loaves *among* the five thousand,
how many baskets[b] *full of broken pieces* took ye up?
They say unto him, Twelve.
20 And when the seven *among* the four thousand,
how many basket*fuls*[c] *of broken pieces* took ye up?
And they say unto him, Seven.
21 *And he said unto them,*
Do ye not *yet understand?*

Matt. xvi.

4b And he left them,
and departed.
5 *And the disciples came* to the other side
and forgot to take bread.

6 And Jesus said unto them,
Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees
and *Sadducees.*
7 And they reasoned *among themselves*, saying,
We *took* no bread.
8 And Jesus perceiving it said, *O ye of little faith,*
why reason ye *among yourselves*, because ye have no bread?
9 Do ye not yet perceive,

neither remember
the five loaves *of* the five thousand,
and how many baskets[b] ye took up?

10 neither the seven *loaves of* the four thousand,
and how many baskets[c] ye took up?

11 *How is it that* ye do not *perceive*
that I spake not to you concerning bread?
But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.
12 *Then understood they how that he bade them*
not beware of the leaven of bread,
but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

§ 45. A BLIND MAN

Mark viii.

22 *And they come unto Bethsaida. And they bring to him a blind*
23 *man, and beseech him to touch him. | And he took hold of*
the blind man by the hand, and brought him out of the village;
and when he had spit on his eyes, and laid his hands upon
24 *him, he asked him, Seest thou aught? | And he looked up,*
and said, I see men; for I behold them as trees, walking. |
25 *Then again he laid his hands upon his eyes; and he looked*
26 *stedfastly, and was restored, and saw all things clearly. | And*
he sent him away to his home, saying, Do not even enter into
the village.

§ 46. PETER'S CONFESSION

Mark viii.

A.
27 And Jesus *went forth*, and his disciples,
into the *villages* of Caesarea Philippi:
and *in the way* he asked his disciples,
saying unto them, Who do men say that I am?
28 And they *told* him, saying, John the Baptist:
and others Elijah;
but others, One of the prophets.
29 And he *asked* them, But who say ye that I am?
Peter answereth and saith unto him,

Matt. xvi.

13 Now when Jesus *came*
into the *parts* of Caesarea Philippi,
he asked his disciples,
saying, Who do men say that[1] *the Son of man is*?
14 And they said, *Some say* John the Baptist;
some, Elijah:
and others, *Jeremiah*, or one of the prophets.
15 He saith unto them, But who say ye that I am?
16 And *Simon* Peter answered and said,

[a] Jer. v. 21; Ezek. xii. 2. [b] κόφινοι (cf. § 35). [c] σφυρίδες (cf. § 42).

HE PHARISEES.

Luke xi, xii.

And when he was come out from thence, the scribes and the Pharisees began to press upon him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things; | laying wait for him, to catch something out of his mouth.

[1] *In the meantime, when the many thousands of the multitude were gathered together, insomuch that they trode one upon another,*

he *began* to [2] say unto *his disciples first of all,*
Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees,

which is hypocrisy.

T BETHSAIDA.

Cf. § 41.

F FAITH; AND THE SEQUEL.

Luke ix.

Cf. John vi. 66-71.

And *it came to pass, as he was praying alone,* } the disciples were with him: }
and he asked them,
saying, Who do *the multitudes* say that I am?
And they *answering* said, John the Baptist;
but others say, Elijah;
and others, that one of the *old* prophets *is risen again.*
And he said unto them, But who say ye that I am?
And Peter answering said,

Cf. § 34 A.

[1] M. I the Son of man am.

[2] M. *or* say unto his disciples, First of all beware ye.

§ 46. PETER'S CONFESSION

Mark viii.

Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them
that they should tell no man of him.

B.

31 And he began to *teach* them,
that the Son of man must suffer many things,
and be rejected *by* the elders, and the chief priests,
and the scribes, and be killed,
and *after three days rise* again.
32 *And he spake the saying openly.*
And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But he turning about, *and seeing his disciples,*
rebuked Peter, and saith,
Get thee behind me, Satan:
for thou mindest not the things of God,
but the things of men.

Matt. xvi.

Thou art the Christ, *the Son* of *the living* God.
17 *And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou*
Simon Bar-Jonah: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it
18 *unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. | And I also*
say unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will
build my church; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail
19 *against it. | I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of*
heaven:
and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth
shall be bound in heaven:
and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth
shall be loosed in heaven.
20 Then charged he *the disciples*
that they should tell no man *that he was the Christ.*

21 *From that time* began Jesus to *shew* unto his disciples,
how that he must *go unto Jerusalem, and* suffer many things
of the elders and chief priests
and scribes, and be killed,
and the third day be raised up.

22 And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him,
saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall never be unto thee
23 But he turned,
and said unto Peter,
Get thee behind me, Satan: *thou art a stumbling-block unto me*
for thou mindest not the things of God,
but the things of men.

§ 47. ON

Mark viii, ix.

34 And he *called unto him the multitude*
with his disciples, and said unto them,
If any man would come after me,
let him deny himself, and take up his cross,
and follow me.

35 For whosoever would save his life

shall lose it;
and whosoever shall lose his life

for my sake *and the gospel's*
shall save it.
36 For what doth it profit a man,
to gain the whole world,
and forfeit his life?
37 For what should a man give in exchange for his life?
38 For whosoever shall be ashamed
of me and of my words
in this adulterous and sinful generation,
the Son of man *also* shall be ashamed of him,
when he cometh in the glory of his Father
with the holy angels.

ix. 1 *And he said unto them,* Verily I say unto you,
There be some here of them that stand by,
which shall in no wise taste of death,
till they see the kingdom of God come *with power.*

Matt. xvi.

24 Then said Jesus
unto his disciples,
If any man would come after me,
let him deny himself, and take up his cross,
and follow me.

25 For whosoever would save his life

shall lose it:
and whosoever shall lose his life

for my sake
shall *find* it.
26 For what shall a man be profited,
if he shall gain the whole world,
and forfeit his life?
or what shall a man give in exchange for his life?

27 For the Son of man
shall come in the glory of his Father
with *his* angels;
and then 'shall he render unto every man
according to his deeds.' [a]
28 Verily I say unto you,
There be some of them that stand here,
which shall in no wise taste of death,
till they see the *Son of man* coming *in his* kingdom.

[a] Ps. lxii. 13; Prov. xxiv. 12.

F FAITH; AND THE SEQUEL (*continued*).

Luke ix.

The Christ of God.

Matt. xviii.

18 *Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth*
shall be bound in heaven:
and what things soever ye shall loose on earth
shall be loosed in heaven.

7 But he charged them, *and commanded them*
to tell this to no man;

saying,
2 The Son of man must suffer many things,
and be rejected of the elders and chief priests
and scribes, and be killed,
and the third day be raised up.

Cf. §§ 51, 59.

ISCIPLESHIP.

Luke ix.

3 And he said
unto *all*,
If any man would come after me,
let him deny himself, and take up his cross *daily*,
and follow me.

4 For whosoever would save his life

shall lose it;
but whosoever shall lose his life

for my sake,
the same shall save it.
5 For what is a man profited,
if he gain the whole world,
and *lose or* forfeit his *own self?*

6 For whosoever shall be ashamed
of me and of my words,

of him shall the Son of man be ashamed,
when he cometh in *his own glory, and* the glory of the Father,
and of the holy angels.

27 *But I tell you of a truth,*
There be some of them that stand here,
which shall in no wise taste of death,
till they see the kingdom of God.

Matt. x.

38 And *he that doth not* take his cross
and follow *after* me, *is not*
worthy of me.
39 He that *findeth* his life

shall lose it;
and he that loseth his life

for my sake
shall *find* it.

Cf. Matt. x.

32 Every one therefore who
shall confess me before
men, him will I also con-
fess before my Father
33 which is in heaven. | But
whosoever shall deny me
before men, him will I also
deny before my Father
which is in heaven.

Luke xvii.

33 Whosoever shall *seek to*
gain his life
shall lose it:
but whosoever shall lose
his life

shall *preserve* it.

Cf. Luke xii.

8 And I say unto you, Every
one who shall confess me
before men, him shall the
Son of man also confess
before the angels of God: |
9 but he that denieth me in
the presence of men shall
be denied in the presence
of the angels of God.

[With Mark viii. 38 cf. Matt. xii. 39=xvi. 4a An evil and adulterous generation...]

Mark ix.

A.
2 And after six days
Jesus taketh with him
Peter, and James, and John,
and bringeth them up into a high mountain
apart *by themselves*:
and he was transfigured before them:

3 and his garments became *glistering, exceeding* white;
so as no fuller on earth can whiten them.
4 And there appeared unto them
Elijah with Moses:
and they were talking with Jesus.

B.
5 And Peter answereth and saith to Jesus,
Rabbi, it is good for us to be here:
and let us make three tabernacles;
one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.
6 For he wist not what *to answer;*
for they became sore afraid.

7 And there came a cloud overshadowing them:
and there came a voice out of the cloud,
'This is my beloved Son:' [a]
'hear ye him.' [c]

8 And *suddenly looking round about,*
they saw no one *any more,*
save Jesus only *with themselves.*

C.
9 And as they were coming down from the mountain,
he *charged* them that they should tell no man
what things they had seen,
save when the Son of man should have risen *again*
from the dead.
10 *And they kept the saying, questioning among themselves*
what the rising again from the dead should mean.

Matt. xvii.

1 And after six days
Jesus taketh with him
Peter, and James, and John *his brother,*
and bringeth them up into a high mountain
apart:
2 and he was transfigured before them:
and his face did shine as the sun,
and his garments became white
as the light.
3 And behold, there appeared unto them
Moses and Elijah
talking with him.

4 And Peter answered, and said unto Jesus,
Lord, it is good for us to be here:
if thou wilt, I will make *here* three tabernacles;
one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.

[6 . . . and were sore afraid.]
5 While he was *yet* speaking,
behold, a *bright* cloud overshadowed them:
and *behold*, a voice out of the cloud, saying,
'This is my beloved Son, *in whom I am well pleased;*' [a]
'hear ye him.' [c]
6 And when *the disciples heard it, they fell on their face,*
and were sore afraid.
7 *And Jesus came and touched them and said,*
Arise, and be not afraid.
8 And *lifting up their eyes,*
they saw no one,
save Jesus only.

9 And as they were coming down from the mountain,
Jesus *commanded* them, saying,
Tell *the vision* to no man,
until the Son of man be risen
from the dead.

Mark ix.

11 And *they* asked him, saying,
The scribes say that Elijah must first come.
12 And he said unto them,
'Elijah' indeed cometh *first,*
and 'restoreth' [b] all things:
and *how is it written* of the Son of man,
that he should suffer *many things*
and be set at nought?
13 But I say unto you, that Elijah is come,
and they have also done unto him
whatsoever they listed,
even as it is written of him.

Matt. xvii.

10 And *his disciples* asked him, saying,
Why then say the scribes that Elijah must first come?
11 And he *answered* and said,
'Elijah' indeed cometh,
and '*shall* restore' [b] all things:
12b *Even so* shall the Son of man *also*
suffer *of them.*

12a but I say unto you, that Elijah is come *already,*
and they *knew him not*, but did unto him
whatsoever they listed.

13 *Then understood the disciples that he spake unto them*
of John the Baptist.

[a] Isa. xlii. 1; cf. Ps. ii. 7. [b] Mal. iv. 5. [c] Deut. xviii. 15.

RANSFIGURATION.

Luke ix.

28 And *it came to pass about eight* days after *these sayings,*
he took with him
Peter and John and James,
and *went* up into *the* mountain
to pray.
29 And *as he was praying, the fashion of his countenance was altered,*

and his *raiment* became white *and dazzling.*

30 And behold,
there talked with him *two men,* }
which were Moses and Elijah; }
31 *who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he*
32 *was about to accomplish at Jerusalem.* | *Now Peter and they*
that were with him were heavy with sleep: but when they
were fully awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that
stood with him.
33 *And it came to pass, as they were parting from him,*

Peter said unto Jesus,
Master, it is good for us to be here:
and let us make three tabernacles;
one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah:
not knowing what *he said.*
34b and they feared *as they entered into the cloud.*
34a And while he said these things,
there came a cloud, and overshadowed them:
35 And a voice came out of the cloud, saying, } Cf. John xii. 28.
'This is my [2] Son,' [a] *my chosen:* } Cf. § 4.
'hear ye him.' [c]
6 And when *the voice came,*

Jesus *was found* alone.

And they held their peace, and told no man
in those days any of the things which they had seen.

OF ELIJAH.

Cf. John i. 19–28.

[1] M. *add* How is it that . . . ?

[2] M. *add* beloved.

§ 50. A BOY WITH

Mark ix.

14 And when they came to *the disciples,*

they saw a great multitude *about them,*
15 *and scribes questioning with them.* | *And straightway all the multitude, when they saw him, were greatly amazed, and*
16 *running to him saluted him.* | *And he asked them, What question ye with them?*
17 And one of the multitude *answered* him,
Master, *I brought unto thee* my son,
which *hath* a *dumb* spirit;
18 and *wheresoever* it taketh him,
it *dasheth* him *down:*
and he foameth, and *grindeth his teeth,*
and pineth away:
and I *spake* to thy disciples that they should cast it out;
and they *were not able.*
19 And he answereth them and saith,
O faithless generation,
how long shall I be with you?
how long shall I bear with you?
bring him unto me.
20 *And they brought him unto him:*
and *when he saw him,*
straightway the *spirit* tare him grievously;
and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.
21 *And he asked his father,*
How long time is it since this hath come unto him?
And he said, From a child.
22 And oft-times *it hath cast him* both into the fire
and into the waters, *to destroy him:*
but if thou canst do anything,
have compassion on us, and help us.
23 *And Jesus said unto him, If thou canst!*
All things are possible to him that believeth.
24 *Straightway the father of the child cried out, and said,*[1]
I believe; help thou mine unbelief.
25 And *when* Jesus *saw*
that a multitude came running together,
he rebuked the unclean spirit, *saying unto him,*
Thou dumb and deaf spirit,
I command thee, come out of him,
and enter no more into him.
26 *And having cried out, and torn him much,*
he came out:
and the *child became as one dead;*
insomuch that the more part said, He is dead.
27 *But Jesus took him by the hand,*
and raised him up; and he arose.
28 *And when he was come into the house,*
his disciples asked him *privately*[2], saying,
We could not cast it out.
29 And he said unto them,
This kind can come out by nothing,
save by prayer[3].

Matt. xvii.

14 And when they were come

to the multitude,

there *came* to him a man, *kneeling to him,* and saying,
15a *Lord, have mercy on* my son:
for he is *epileptic, and suffereth grievously:*

16 And I *brought* him to thy disciples,
and they could not *cure* him.
17 And Jesus answered and said,
O faithless and perverse generation,
how long shall I be with you?
how long shall I bear with you?
bring him hither to me.

15b for oft-times *he falleth* into the fire,
and oft-times into the water.

18 And Jesus

rebuked *him*

and *the devil* went out from him:
and the boy *was cured from that hour.*

19 *Then came* the disciples to Jesus *apart,* and said,
Why could not we cast it out?
20 And he saith unto them,

Because of your little faith: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you[4].

A DUMB SPIRIT.

Luke ix.

37 And *it came to pass, on the next day,*
when they were come *down from the mountain,*
a great multitude *met him.*

38 And *behold,* a man from the multitude *cried,* saying,
Master, *I beseech thee to look upon* my son;
39 for he is *mine only child:* and *behold,* a spirit
taketh him, *and he suddenly crieth out;*
and it *teareth* him
that he foameth, and *it hardly departeth from him,*
bruising him sorely.
40 And I *besought* thy disciples to cast it out;
and they could not.
41 And Jesus answered and said,
O faithless and perverse generation,
how long shall I be with you,
and bear with you?
bring hither *thy son.*

42 And *as he was yet a coming,*
the *devil dashed him down, and* tare him grievously.

But Jesus

rebuked the unclean spirit,

and *healed* the boy, *and gave him back to his father.*
43a *And they were all astonished at the majesty of God.*

[1] M. *add* with tears. [2] M. *or* How is it that we . . . ? [3] M. *add* and fasting.
[4] M. *add* 21 But this kind goeth not out save by prayer and fasting

§ 51. THE SECOND PREDICTION

Mark ix.

30 *And they went forth from thence,*
and *passed through* Galilee;
and he would not that any man should know it.
31 For he *taught* his disciples, and said unto them,
The Son of man *is* delivered up into the hands of men,
and they shall kill him;
and when he is killed,
after three days he shall *rise* again.
32 But they understood not the saying,

and were afraid to ask him.

Matt. xvii.

22 And *while they*[1] *abode in* Galilee,

Jesus said unto them,
The Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men;
23 and they shall kill him,

and *the third day* he shall *be raised up.*
And they *were exceeding sorry.*

§ 52. ON

Mark ix.

33 *And they came to Capernaum:*
and when he was in the house
he asked them,
What were ye reasoning in the way?
34 *But they held their peace:*
for *they had disputed one with another in the way*
who was the greatest.
35 *And he sat down, and called the twelve;*
and he saith unto them,
If any man would be first,
he shall be last of all, and minister of all.

36 And he took a little child,
and set him in the midst of them:
and *taking him in his arms,* he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such little children

in my name, receiveth me:

and whosoever receiveth me,
receiveth *not me, but* him that sent me.

Matt. xviii.

1 *In that hour came the disciples unto Jesus, saying,*
Who then is greatest *in the kingdom of heaven?*

2 And he *called to him* a little child,
and set him in the midst of them,
and said,
3 *Verily I say unto you, Except ye turn, and become as little*
children, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.
4 *Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child,*
the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.
5 And whoso shall receive one such little child

in my name, receiveth me: . . .

§ 53. OF HELPERS WHO

Mark ix.

38 John said unto him, Master,
we saw one casting out devils in thy name:
and we forbade him, because he followed not us.
39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not:
for there is no man which shall do
a mighty work in my name,
and be able quickly to speak evil of me.
40 For he that is not against *us* is for *us.*
41 For whosoever shall give *you*
a cup of water to drink,
because ye are Christ's,
verily I say unto you,
he shall in no wise lose his reward.

F THE PASSION.

Luke ix.

[3b] *But while all were marvelling at all the things which he did,*

[4] he said unto his disciples, *Let these words sink into your ears:*
for the Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men.

Cf. §§ 46, 59.

[45] But they understood not this saying,
and it was concealed from them, that they should not perceive it:
and they were afraid to ask him *about this saying.*

UMILITY.

Luke ix.

[6] And *there arose a reasoning among them,*
which *of them should be* greatest.
[7] *But when Jesus saw the reasoning of their heart,*

Cf. Luke xxii.

[24] And *there arose also a contention among them,*
which *of them is accounted to be* greatest.

Cf. Matt. xxiii.

[11] *But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.*
Cf. § 60.

he took a little child,
and set him *by his side,*
[8] and said unto them,

Matt. x.	**Luke x.**
[40] He that receiveth *you*	[16] He that *heareth you heareth* me;
receiveth me,	*and he that rejecteth you, rejecteth* me;
and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me:	and he that *rejecteth* me *rejecteth* him that sent me.

Whosoever shall receive *this* little child
in my name, receiveth me:
and whosoever shall receive me receiveth him that sent me:
for he that is least among you all,
the same is great.

Cf. John xii. 44–45, xiii. 20, xiv. 24, xv. 23.

RE NOT DISCIPLES.

Luke ix.

[49] And John *answered* and said, Master,
we saw one casting out devils in thy name;
and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us.
[50] But Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not:

for he that is not against *you* is for *you.*

Matt. x.

[42] And *whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones*
a cup of *cold* water *only,*
in the name of a disciple,
verily I say unto you,
he shall in no wise lose his reward.

[1] M. were gathering themselves together.

Mark ix.

42 And whosoever shall cause one of these little ones
that believe[1] on me to stumble,
it were *better* for him
if a great millstone[a] were hanged about his neck,
and he were *cast* into the sea.

43 And if thy hand cause thee to stumble,
cut it off:
it is good for thee to enter into life maimed,
rather than having thy two hands
to go into hell, into the *unquenchable* fire.
45 And if thy foot cause thee to stumble,
cut it off:
it is good for thee to enter into life halt,
rather than having thy two feet
to be cast into *hell.*
47 And if thine eye cause thee to stumble,
cast it out:
it is good for thee to enter into *the kingdom of God*
with one eye,
rather than having two eyes
to be cast into hell;
48 *where 'their worm dieth not,*
and the fire is not quenched.' [b]

Mark ix.

A.
49 *For every one shall be salted with fire*[2].

B.
50 Salt is good:
but if the salt have lost its *saltness,*
wherewith *will ye* season it?

C.
Have salt in yourselves,
and be at peace one with another.

Mark x.

1 And he *arose* from *thence,*
and cometh into the borders of Judaea
and beyond Jordan:
and multitudes *come together unto* him *again*;
and, *as he was wont,* he *taught* them *again.*
2 And there came unto him Pharisees
and asked him,
Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife?
tempting him.
3 And he answered and said unto them,
What did Moses command you?
4 And they said, Moses *suffered*
'to *write* a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.' [c]
5 But Jesus said unto them,

[a] *μύλος ὀνικὸς*, Mark and Matt.: *λίθος μυλικὸς*, Luke.

§ 54. O

Matt. xviii.

6 . . . but whoso shall cause one of these little ones
which believe on me to stumble,
it *is profitable* for him
that a great millstone[a] should be hanged about his neck
and that he should be *sunk in the depth of* the sea.
7 *Woe unto the world because of occasions* of stumbling!
for *it must needs be* that the occasions come;
but woe to that man through whom *the occasion* cometh
8 And if thy hand *or thy foot* causeth thee to stumble,
cut it off, *and cast it from thee*:
it is good for thee to enter into life maimed *or halt,*
rather than having two hands *or two feet*
to *be cast* into the *eternal* fire.
[8 . . . thy foot . . .

. . . halt . . .
. . . two feet . . .
. . . be cast . . .]
9 And if thine eye causeth thee to stumble,
pluck it out, *and* cast *it from thee*:
it is good for thee to enter into *life*
with one eye,
rather than having two eyes
to be cast into *the* hell *of fire.*

10 *See that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unt*
you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face
my Father which is in heaven[3].

§ 55. THREE SAYING

Matt. v.

13 *Ye are* the salt *of the earth*:
but if the salt have lost its savour,
wherewith shall it be *salted*?
It is *thenceforth good for nothing,*
but to be cast out *and trodden under foot* of men.

§ 56. ON DIVORC

Matt. xix.

1 And *it came to pass when Jesus had finished th se words,*
he *departed* from *Galilee,*
and came into the borders of Judaea
beyond Jordan;
2 and *great* multitudes *followed* him;
and he *healed* them *there.*
3 And there came unto him Pharisees,
tempting him, and saying,
Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife *for every cause?*

4a And he answered and said,
Have ye not read, . . .
7 They say unto him, *Why then* did Moses *command*
'to give a bill of divorcement, and to put her away'? [c]
8 He saith unto them,

[b] Isa. lxvi. 24.

[c] Deut. xxiv. 1.

FFENCES.

Luke xvii.

[2] . . . *rather than that* he should cause one of these little ones
to stumble.
[2] It were *well* for him
if a *millstone* [a] were hanged about his neck,
and he were *thrown* into the sea, . . .
[1] *And he said unto his disciples,*
It is impossible but that occasions of stumbling should come:
but woe unto him, through whom *they* come!

Matt. v.

[30] And if thy *right* hand causeth thee to stumble,
cut it off, *and cast it from thee*:
for it is *profitable* to thee *that one of thy members should perish,*
and not *thy whole body*
go into hell.

[29] And if thy *right* eye causeth thee to stumble,
pluck it out, *and* cast *it from thee*:
for it is *profitable* for thee *that one of thy members should perish*

and not *thy whole body*
be cast into hell.

BOUT SALT.

Luke xiv.

[34] Salt *therefore* is good:
but if even the salt have lost its savour,
wherewith shall it be seasoned?
It is *fit neither for the land nor for the dunghill*:
men cast it out.

ND ADULTERY.

Matt. v.

[31] *It was said also,* '*Whosoever shall* put away his wife,
let him give her a *writing* of divorcement': [c]

[1] M. *omit* on me. [2] M. *add* and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.
[3] M. *add* [11] For the Son of man came to save that which was lost.

§ 56. ON DIVORCE

Mark x.

For your hardness of heart
he wrote you this commandment.

6 But from the beginning *of the creation*,
'Male and female made he them.' [a]
7 'For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother,
[1] and shall cleave to his wife;
8 and the twain shall become one flesh:' [b]
so that they are no more twain, but one flesh.
9 What therefore God hath joined together,
let not man put asunder.
10 *And in the house*
the disciples asked him again of this matter.
11 And *he* saith unto *them*,
Whosoever shall put away his wife,

and marry another,
committeth adultery *against her*:
12 *and if she herself shall put away her husband,*
and marry another, she

committeth adultery.

Matt. xix.

Moses for your hardness of heart
suffered you to put away your wives:
but from the beginning *it hath not been so.*
4b . . . that *he which made them* from the beginning
'made them male and female,' [a] *and said*
5 'For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother,
and shall cleave to his wife;
and the twain shall become one flesh?' [b]
6 So that they are no more twain, but one flesh.
What therefore God hath joined together,
let not man put asunder.

9 And I say unto you,
Whosoever shall put away his wife.
[2] *except for fornication*,
and shall marry another,
committeth adultery:

3 and he that marrieth her when she is put away
committeth adultery.
10 *The disciples say unto him, If the case of the man is s*
11 *with his wife, it is not expedient to marry. | But he sai*
unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, but they t
12 *whom it is given. | For there are eunuchs, which were so bor*
from their mother's womb: and there are eunuchs, whic
were made eunuchs by men: and there are eunuchs, whic
made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sak
He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

§ 57. BLESSING THE

Mark x.

13 And they brought unto him little children,
that he should touch them:
and the disciples rebuked them.
14 But when Jesus saw it,
he was moved with indignation,
and said unto them,
Suffer the little children to come unto me;
forbid them not:
for of such is the kingdom of God.
15 Verily I say unto you,
Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God
as a little child,
he shall in no wise enter therein.
16 *And he took them in his arms,*
and blessed them,
laying his hands upon them.

Matt. xix.

13 Then *were there* brought unto him little children,
that he should *lay his hands on* them, *and pray*:
and the disciples rebuked them.
14 But Jesus

said,
Suffer the little children, and forbid them not,
to come unto me:
for of such is the kingdom of *heaven.*

15 And he laid his hands on them,
and departed thence.

§ 58. ON RENUNCIATION

Mark x.

A.
17 And *as he was going forth into the way,*
there *ran* one to him, *and kneeled to him,*
and asked him, Good Master,
what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?
18 And Jesus said unto him,

Matt. xix.

16 And *behold*
one *came* to him
and said, [4] Master,
what *good thing* shall I do, that I may *have* eternal life?
17 And he said unto him,

[a] Gen. i. 27.

[b] Gen. ii. 24.

ND ADULTERY (*continued*).

Luke xvi.

[18] Every one that putteth away his wife,

and marrieth another,
committeth adultery:

and he that marrieth one that is put away *from a husband*
committeth adultery.

Matt. v.

[32] But I say unto you,
that every one that putteth away his wife,
saving for the cause of fornication,

maketh her an adulteress:

and whosoever shall marry her when she is put away
committeth adultery.

LITTLE CHILDREN.

Luke xviii.

[15] And they brought unto him also their *babes*,
that he should touch them:
but when the disciples saw it, they rebuked them.
[16] But Jesus *called them unto him*,

saying,
Suffer the little children to come unto me,
and forbid them not:
for of such is the kingdom of God.
[17] Verily I say unto you,
Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God
as a little child,
he shall in no wise enter therein.

Matt. xviii.

[3b] Verily I say unto you,
Except ye turn, and become
as little children,
ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of *heaven.*
[4] *Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child,*
the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

OF RICHES.

Luke xviii.

[18] And *a certain ruler*
asked him, saying, Good Master,
what shall I do to inherit eternal life?
[19] And Jesus said unto him,

[1] M. *omit* and shall cleave to his wife.
[2] M. saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress.
[3] M. *omit to end of v.* 9.
[4] M. Good Master.

§ 58. ON RENUNCIATION

Mark x.

Why callest thou me good ?
none is good save one, even God.
19 Thou knowest the commandments,

'Do not kill, Do not commit adultery,
Do not steal, Do not bear false witness,'
Do not defraud, 'Honour thy father and mother.' [a]

20 And he said unto him, *Master,*
all these things have I observed from my youth.
21 And Jesus *looking upon him loved him,*
and said unto him,
One thing thou lackest :
go, sell *whatsoever* thou hast,
and give to the poor,
and thou shalt have treasure in heaven :
and come, follow me.
22 But *his countenance fell* at the saying,
and he went away sorrowful :
for he was one that had great possessions.

B.

23 And Jesus *looked round about,*
and saith unto his disciples,
How hardly shall they that have riches
enter into the kingdom of God !
24 *And the disciples were amazed at his words.*
But *Jesus answereth* again, and saith unto them,
Children, how hard is it [1] *for them that trust in riches*
to enter into the kingdom of God !
25 It is easier for a camel
to go through a needle's eye,
than for a rich man
to enter into the kingdom of God.
26 And they were astonished exceedingly,

saying unto him, Then who can be saved ?
27 Jesus looking upon them saith,
With men it is impossible, *but not with God :*
for 'all things are possible with God.' [c]

C.

28 Peter *began* to say unto him,
Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 Jesus said, Verily I say unto you,

There is no man that hath left house,
or brethren, or sisters, or mother, or father,
or children, or lands, for my sake,
and for the gospel's sake,
30 but he shall receive a hundredfold *now* in this time,
houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers,
and children, and lands,
with persecutions ;
and in the world to come eternal life.

31 But many that are first shall be last ;

and the last first.

Matt. xix.

2 Why *askest thou me concerning that which is good* ?
One there is who is good :
but if thou wouldest enter into life, keep the commandments
18 *He saith unto him, Which ? And Jesus said,*
'*Thou shalt* not kill, *Thou shalt* not commit adultery,
Thou shalt not steal, *Thou shalt* not bear false witness,
19 Honour thy father and *thy* mother : ' [a] *and*
'*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.*' [b]
20 The *young man* saith unto him,
All these things have I observed : *what lack I yet ?*
21 Jesus
said unto him,
If thou wouldest be perfect, [20 . . . what lack I yet ? . . .]
go, sell that thou hast,
and give to the poor,
and thou shalt have treasure in heaven :
and come, follow me.
22 But when the *young man* heard the saying,
he went away sorrowful :
for he was one that had great possessions.

23 And Jesus
said unto his disciples,
Verily I say unto you, it is hard for a rich man
to enter into the kingdom of *heaven.*

24 And again I say unto you,

It is easier for a camel
to go through a needle's eye,
than for a rich man
to enter into the kingdom of God.
25 And *when the disciples* heard it, they were astonished ex
ceedingly,
saying, Who then can be saved ?
26 And Jesus looking upon them said to them,
With men this is impossible ;
but 'with God all things are possible.' [c]

27 Then *answered* Peter and said unto him,
Lo, we have left all, and followed thee ; *what then shal*
we have ?
28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you,
that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when th
Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also sha
sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.
29 And *every one* that hath left houses,
or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother,
or children, or lands, for my *name's* sake,

shall receive a hundredfold,

and *shall inherit* eternal life.

30 But many shall be last that are first,

and first that are last.

[a] Exod. xx. 12 f. = Deut. v. 16 f. [b] Lev. xix. 18. [c] Gen. xviii. 14 ; Job xlii. 2 ; Zech. viii. 6 (LXX).

F RICHES (*continued*).

Luke xviii.

Why callest thou me good?
none is good, save one, even God.
Thou knowest the commandments,

'Do not commit adultery, Do not kill,
Do not steal, Do not bear false witness,
Honour thy father and mother.' [a]

Cf. § 68.

And he said,
All these things have I observed from my youth up.
And *when* Jesus *heard it*
he said unto him,
One thing thou lackest yet:
sell *all* that thou hast,
and *distribute* unto the poor,
and thou shalt have treasure in heaven:
and come, follow me.
But when he heard *these things*,
he *became exceeding* sorrowful;
for he was *very rich*.

And Jesus *seeing him*
said,
How hardly shall they that have riches
enter into the kingdom of God!

For it is easier for a camel
to *enter in* through a needle's eye,
than for a rich man
to enter into the kingdom of God.
And they that heard it

said, Then who can be saved?
But he said,
The things which are impossible with men
are possible with God.

And Peter said,
Lo, we have left [3] *our own*, and followed thee.

And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you,

There is no man that hath left house,
or *wife*, or brethren, or *parents*,
or children,
for the kingdom of God's sake,
Who shall not receive *manifold more* in this time,

and in the world to come eternal life.

Matt. xx.

So the last shall be first,

and the first last.

Luke xiii.

And behold,
There are last which shall be first,
and there are first which shall be last.

[1] M. *omit* for them that trust in riches.
[2] M. Why callest thou me good? None is good save one, even God.
[3] M. *or* our own homes.

§ 59. THE THIRD PREDICTIO

Mark x.

32 And *they were* in the way
going up to Jerusalem;
and Jesus was *going before them:*
and they were amazed;
and they that followed were afraid.
And he took *again* the twelve,
and *began to tell* them *the things*
that were to happen unto him, saying,
33 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem;

and the Son of man shall be delivered
unto the chief priests and the scribes;
and they shall condemn him to death,
and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles:
34 and they shall mock him,
and shall spit upon him,
and shall scourge him, and shall kill him;
and *after three days* he shall rise again.

Matt. xx.

17 And as Jesus was [17b ... in the way ...]
going up to Jerusalem,

he took the twelve *disciples apart*,
and in the way he said unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem;

and the Son of man shall be delivered
unto the chief priests and scribes;
and they shall condemn him to death,
and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles
to mock,

and to scourge, and to *crucify*:
and the third day he shall be raised up.

§ 60. THE REQUEST O

Mark x.

35 And there come *near* unto him
James and John, the sons of Zebedee,
saying unto him, *Master,*
we would that thou shouldest do for us
whatsoever we shall ask of thee.
36 And he said unto *them*,
What would *ye that I should do for you*?
37 And *they* said unto him,
Grant unto us that *we* may sit,
one on thy right hand, and one on thy left hand
in thy *glory.*
38 But Jesus said unto them,
Ye know not what ye ask.
Are ye able to drink the cup that I drink?
or to be baptized with the baptism
that I am baptized with?
39 And they said unto him, We are able.
And Jesus said unto them,
The cup *that I drink* ye shall drink;
and with the baptism that I am baptized withal
shall ye be baptized:
40 but to sit on my right hand or on my left hand
is not mine to give: but it is for them
for whom it hath been prepared.
41 And when the ten heard it,
they *began* to be moved with indignation
concerning *James and John.*
42 And Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them,
Ye know that *they which are accounted* to rule
over the Gentiles, lord it over them;
and their great ones exercise authority over them.
43 But it *is* not so among you:
but whosoever would become great among you,
shall be your minister:
44 and whosoever would be first among you,
shall be servant *of all.*

45 *For verily* the Son of man came
not to be ministered unto, but to minister,
and to give his life a ransom for many.

Matt. xx.

20 Then came to him
the mother of the sons of Zebedee *with her sons*
worshipping him,

and asking *a certain thing* of him.
21 And he said unto *her*,
What wouldest *thou*?
She saith unto him,
Command that *these my two sons* may sit,
one on thy right hand, and one on thy left hand,
in thy *kingdom.*
22 But Jesus *answered* and said,
Ye know not what ye ask.
Are ye able to drink the cup that I *am about to* drink?

They say unto him, We are able.
23 He saith unto them,
My cup *indeed* ye shall drink:

but to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand,
is not mine to give, but it is for them
for whom it hath been prepared *of my Father.*
24 And when the ten heard it,
they were moved with indignation
concerning *the two brethren.*
25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said,
Ye know that the rulers
of the Gentiles lord it over them,
and their great ones exercise authority over them.
26 Not so shall it be among you:
but whosoever would become great among you
shall be your minister;
27 and whosoever would be first among you
shall be *your* servant:

28 *even as* the Son of man came
not to be ministered unto, but to minister,
and to give his life a ransom for many.

F THE PASSION.

Luke xviii.

And he took *unto him* the twelve,
and said unto them,

Behold, we go up to Jerusalem,
and all the things that are written by the prophets
shall be accomplished unto the Son of man.

For he shall be delivered up unto the Gentiles,
and shall be mocked, *and shamefully entreated,*
and spit upon:
and they shall scourge and kill him:
and the third day he shall rise again.
And they understood none of these things; and this saying
was hid from them, and they perceived not the things that
were said.

Cf. §§ 46, 51.

AMES AND JOHN.

Cf. Luke xii.
But I have a baptism
to be baptized with . . . ;

Luke xxii.

And he said unto them,
The *kings*
of the Gentiles have lordship over them;
and they that have authority over them *are called Benefactors.*
But ye shall not be so:
but he that *is the greater* among you,
let him become as the younger;
and he that is *chief,*
as he that doth serve.
For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that
serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat?
but I am in the midst of you
as he that serveth.

Matt. xxiii.
But he that is *greatest* among you
shall be *your* servant.

Cf. § 52.
Cf. John x. 15, xv. 13.

§ 61. THE BLIND MA

Mark x.

46 *And* they *come to Jericho:*
and as he went out from Jericho,
with his disciples and a great multitude,
the son of Timaeus, Bartimaeus,
a blind beggar,
was sitting by the way side.
47 And when he heard
that it was Jesus of Nazareth,
he *began* to cry out, and say,
Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.
48 And *many* rebuked him,
that he should hold his peace:
but he cried out the more a great deal,
Thou son of David, have mercy on me.
49 And Jesus stood still, and *said, Call ye him.*
And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good
50 *cheer: rise, he calleth thee.* | *And he, casting away his*
garment, sprang up, and came to Jesus.
51 And Jesus *answered* him, and said,
What wilt thou that I should do unto thee?
And *the blind man* said unto him,
Rabboni, that I may receive my sight.
52 And Jesus said unto him, *Go thy way,*
thy faith hath made thee whole.
And straightway he received his sight,
and followed him *in the way.*

Matt. xx.

29 And as they went out from Jericho,
a great multitude *followed* him.
30 *And behold,*
two blind men
sitting by the way side,
when *they* heard
that Jesus was passing by,
cried out, saying,
Lord, have mercy on *us,* thou son of David.
31 And *the multitude* rebuked *them,*
that *they* should hold *their* peace:
but *they* cried out the more, *saying,*
Lord, have mercy on *us,* thou son of David.
32 And Jesus stood still, and *called them,*

and said,
What will *ye* that I should do unto *you?*
33 *They* say unto him,
Lord, that *our eyes may be opened.*
34 And Jesus, *being moved with compassion,*
touched their eyes:
and straightway *they* received *their* sight,
and followed him.

§ 62. THE ENTR

Mark xi.

A.

1 And when they draw nigh unto Jerusalem,
unto Bethphage and Bethany,
at the mount of Olives,
he sendeth two of his disciples,
and saith unto them,
2 Go your way into the village that is over against you:
and straightway as ye enter into it,
ye shall find a colt tied,
whereon no man ever yet sat;
loose him, and bring him.
3 And if any one say unto you,
Why do ye this? say ye,
The Lord hath need of him;
and straightway he will send him *back hither.*

B.

4 And they went away, and found a colt
tied at the door without in the open street;
and they loose him.
5 And *certain of them that stood there* said unto them,
What do ye, loosing the colt?
6 And they said unto them even as Jesus *had said:*
and they let them go.
7 And they bring the colt unto Jesus,
and *cast* on him their garments;
and he sat upon him.

Matt. xxi.

1 And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem,
and came unto Bethphage,
unto the mount of Olives,
then Jesus sent two disciples,
saying unto them,
2 Go into the village that is over against you,
and straightway
ye shall find *an ass* tied, *and* a colt *with her*

loose *them,* and bring *them* unto me.
3 And if any one say *aught* unto you,
ye shall say,
The Lord hath need of *them;*
and straightway he will send *them.*
4 *Now this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which w*
spoken by the prophet, saying,
5 *'Tell ye the daughter of Zion,*
Behold, thy King cometh unto thee,
Meek, and riding upon an ass,
And upon a colt the foal of an ass.' [a]

6 And *the disciples* went,

and *did* even as Jesus *appointed* them,

7 and brought *the ass, and* the colt,
and *put* on *them* their garments;
and he sat thereon.

[a] Isa. lxii. 11; Zech. ix. 9.

AT JERICHO.

Luke xviii.

35 *And it came to pass,*
as he *drew nigh unto* Jericho,

a *certain* blind man
sat by the way side begging :
36 and hearing *a multitude going by, he inquired what this meant.*
37 *And they told him,* that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.
38 And he cried, saying,
Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.
39 And *they that went before* rebuked him,
that he should hold his peace :
but he cried out the more a great deal,
Thou son of David, have mercy on me.
40 And Jesus stood, and *commanded him to be brought unto him :*

and *when he was come near,* he *asked* him,
41 What wilt thou that I should do unto thee ?
And he said,
Lord, that I may receive my sight.
42 And Jesus said unto him, *Receive thy sight :*
thy faith hath made thee whole.
43 And immediately he received his sight,
and followed him, *glorifying God :*
and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

Cf. Mark v. 34 . . . thy faith hath made thee whole.
Cf. Luke vii. 50, xvii. 19.

INTO JERUSALEM.

Luke xix.

28 *And when he had thus spoken, he went on before, going up to Jerusalem.*
29 And *it came to pass,* when he drew nigh
unto Bethphage and Bethany,
at *the mount that is called* the mount of Olives,
he sent two of the disciples,
30 saying,
Go your way into the village over against you ;
in the which as ye enter
ye shall find a colt tied,
whereon no man ever yet sat :
loose him, and bring him.
31 And if any one ask you,
Why do ye *loose him* ? *thus* shall ye say,
The Lord hath need of him.

32 And *they that were sent* went away, and found
even as he had said unto them.
33 And *as* they were loosing the colt,
the owners thereof said unto them,
Why loose ye the colt ?
34 And they said, *The Lord hath need of him.*

35 And they brought him to Jesus :
and they *threw* their garments upon the colt,
and *set Jesus* thereon.

§ 62. THE ENTRY

Mark xi.

8 And *many* spread their garments *upon* the way;

and others branches,
which they had cut from the *fields*.
9 And *they* that went before, and *they* that followed,

cried, 'Hosanna;
Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord:' [a]
10 *Blessed is the kingdom that cometh,*
the kingdom of our father David:
Hosanna in the highest.

Matt. xxi.

8 And *the most part of the multitude* spread their garments
in the way;
and others cut branches from the *trees,*
and spread them in the way.
9 And the *multitudes* that went before, and that followed,

cried, saying, 'Hosanna' *to the son of David:*
'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord;' [a]

[. . . the son of David . . .]
Hosanna in the highest.

C.
11 And he entered into Jerusalem,
into the temple;
and when he had looked round about upon all things,
it being now eventide,
he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

10 And when he was come into Jerusalem,
11 *all the city was stirred, saying, Who is this?* | *And the*
multitudes said, This is the prophet, Jesus, from Nazareth
of Galilee.

§ 63. THE FIG TREE, AND THE

Mark xi.

A.
12 And on the *morrow,*
when they were *come out from Bethany,*
he hungered.
13 And seeing a fig tree *afar off*
having leaves, he came,
if haply he might find anything thereon:
and when he came to it,
he found nothing but leaves;
for it was not the season of figs.
14 And he *answered* and said unto it,
No man eat fruit from thee
henceforward for ever.
And his disciples heard it.

B.
15 *And they come to Jerusalem:*
and he entered into the temple,
and began to cast out them that sold
and them that bought in the temple,
and overthrew the tables of the money-changers,
and the seats of them that sold the doves;
16 *and he would not suffer that any man*
should carry a vessel through the temple.
17 And he *taught,* and said unto them,
Is it not written, 'My house shall be called
a house of prayer *for all the nations?*' [b]
but ye have made it 'a den of robbers.' [c]

18 And the chief priests and the scribes *heard* it,
and sought how they might destroy him:

Matt. xxi.

18 Now in the *morning*
as he *returned to the city,*
he hungered.
19 And seeing a fig tree *by the way side,*
he came to it,

and found nothing thereon, but leaves *only*;

and he saith unto it,
Let there be no fruit from thee
henceforward for ever.
And immediately the fig tree withered away.

12 And Jesus entered into the temple[1] *of God,*
and cast out *all* them that sold
and bought in the temple,
and overthrew the tables of the money-changers,
and the seats of them that sold the doves;

13 and he saith unto them,
It is written, 'My house shall be called
a house of prayer:' [b]
but ye *make* it 'a den of robbers.' [c]
14 And *the blind and the lame came to him* in the temple:
and he healed them.
15 But *when* the chief priests and the scribes *saw*

the wonderful things that he did, and the children that wer

[a] Ps. cxviii. 25-26. [b] Isa. lvi. 7. [c] Jer. vii. 11. [d] Ps. cxxxvii. 9.

NTO JERUSALEM (*continued*).

Luke xix.

36 And as he went, they spread their garments in the way. Cf. John xii. 12–19.

37 *And as he was now drawing nigh, even at the descent of the*
mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began
to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty
works which they had seen;
38 saying,
'Blessed is' *the King* 'that cometh in the name of the Lord:'[a]

[. . . the King . . .]
peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.
39 *And some of the Pharisees from the multitude said unto*
40 *him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. | And he answered and*
said, I tell you that, if these shall hold their peace, the stones
will cry out.
41 *And when he drew nigh, he saw the city and wept over it,*
42 *saying, | If thou hadst known in this day, even thou, the*
things which belong unto peace! but now they are hid from
43 *thine eyes. | For the days shall come upon thee, when thine*
enemies shall cast up a bank about thee, and compass thee
44 *round, and keep thee in on every side, | and shall 'dash' thee*
'to the ground', and 'thy children'[d] *within thee; and they*
shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou
knewest not the time of thy visitation.

CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE.

Luke xix.

[Cf. Luke xiii.

6 *And he spake this parable; A certain man had a fig tree*
planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon,
7 *and found none. | And he said unto the vinedresser, Behold,*
these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and
find none: cut it down; why doth it also cumber the ground?|
8 *And he answering saith unto him, Lord, let it alone this*
9 *year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: | and if*
it bear fruit thenceforth, well; but if not, thou shalt cut it
down.]

45 And he entered into the temple, Cf. John ii. 13–16.
and began to cast out them that sold,

saying unto them,
46 It is written, 'And my house shall be
a house of prayer':[b]
but ye have made it 'a den of robbers.'[c]
47 And *he was teaching daily* in the temple.

But the chief priests and the scribes *and the principal men of the people*
sought to destroy him:

[1] M. *omit* of God.

§ 63. THE FIG TREE, AND THE

Mark xi.

Matt. xxi.

crying in the temple and saying, Hosanna to the son of
David; they were moved with indignation, and said unto
16 *him, | Hearest thou what these are saying? And Jesus*
saith unto them, Yea: did ye never read, 'Out of the mouth
of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?' [a]

for they *feared him,*
for all the *multitude was astonished at his teaching.*

19 And every *evening* he went forth out of the city.

17 And *he left them, and* went forth out of the city
to Bethany, and lodged *there.*

C.
20 *And as they passed by in the morning,*
they saw the fig tree
withered away from the roots.
21 And *Peter calling to remembrance*
saith unto him, *Rabbi, behold,*
the fig tree *which thou cursedst* is withered away.
22 And Jesus answering saith unto them,

[19b And *immediately* the fig tree
withered away.]
20 And *when the disciples saw it, they marvelled,*
saying,
How did the fig tree *immediately* wither away?
21 And Jesus answered and said unto them,

23 Have faith *in God.* | Verily I say unto you,

Verily I say unto you, if ye have faith,

Whosoever shall say unto this mountain,
Be thou taken up and cast into the sea;
and shall not doubt in his heart,
but shall believe that what he saith cometh to pass;
he shall have it.

and doubt not, ye shall not only do what is done to the fig
tree, but
even if ye shall say unto this mountain,
Be thou taken up and cast into the sea,

it shall be done.

D.
24 *Therefore I say unto you,*
All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for,
believe *that ye have received them,*
and ye shall *have* them.
25 *And whensoever ye stand praying,*
forgive, if ye *have aught against any one;*
that your Father also which is in heaven
may forgive you *your trespasses* [1].

22 And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer,
believing,
ye shall *receive.*

§ 64. A QUESTION

Mark xi.

Matt. xxi.

27 And they come *again to Jerusalem:*
and as he was *walking* in the temple,
there come to him the chief priests,
and the scribes, and the elders;
28 and they said unto him,
By what authority doest thou these things?
or who gave thee this authority *to do these things?*
29 And Jesus said unto them,
I will ask of you one question,
and *answer* me, and I will tell you
by what authority I do these things.
30 The baptism of John,
was it from heaven, or from men? *answer me.*
31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying,
If we shall say, From heaven; he will say,
Why then did ye not believe him?
32 But should we say, From men—

23 And when he was come
into the temple,
the chief priests and the elders *of the people*
came unto him, as he was teaching,
and said,
By what authority doest thou these things?
and who gave thee this authority?
24 And Jesus answered and said unto them,
I also will ask you one question,
which *if* ye tell me, I *likewise* will tell you
by what authority I do these things.
25 The baptism of John,
whence was it? from heaven or from men?
And they reasoned with themselves, saying,
If we shall say, From heaven; he will say *unto us,*
Why then did ye not believe him?
26 But if we shall say, From men;

they feared the people:
for all [2] *verily held* John to be a prophet.

we fear the *multitude;*
for all hold John as a prophet.

[a] Ps. viii. 2.

LEANSING OF THE TEMPLE (*continued*).

Luke xvii, xix, xxi.

x. [48] and they *could not find what they might do;*
for the *people* all *hung upon him, listening.*

Cf. Matt. vii. 28 . . . the multitudes were astonished at his teaching. xxii. 33 And when the multitudes heard it, they were astonished at his teaching.

xi. [37] *And every day he was teaching in the temple;*
and every *night* he went out,
and lodged *in the mount that is called the mount of Olives.*

Matt. xvii.

vii. [5] *And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.*
And the Lord said,
[6] If ye have faith
as a grain of mustard seed,

[20b] . . . for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith
as a grain of mustard seed,

ye would say unto this *sycamine tree,*
Be thou rooted up, and be thou planted in the sea;

ye shall say unto this mountain,
Remove hence to yonder place;

and *it would have obeyed you.*

and *it shall remove;*

and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

Cf. John xiv. 13, xv. 7, 16, xvi. 23.

Matt. vi.

[14] For if ye forgive *men their trespasses,*
your heavenly Father
will also forgive you.
[15] *But if ye forgive not men their trespasses,*
neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

ABOUT AUTHORITY.

Luke xx.

[1] *And it came to pass, on one of the days,*
as he was teaching *the people* in the temple, *and preaching the gospel,*
there came *upon* him the chief priests
and the scribes with the elders;
[2] and they *spake,* saying unto him, *Tell us:*
By what authority doest thou these things?
or who *is he that* gave thee this authority?
[3] And he answered and said unto them,
I also will ask you *a* question;
and tell me:

[4] The baptism of John,
was it from heaven, or from men?
[5] And they reasoned with themselves, saying,
If we shall say, From heaven; he will say,
Why did ye not believe him?
[6] But if we shall say, From men;

all the people will stone us:
for they *be persuaded* that John was a prophet.

Cf. Matt. xiv.

[5] *And when he would have put him to death,*
he feared the multitude,
because they *counted* him
as a prophet.

Cf. Matt. xxi.

[46] *And when they sought to lay hold on him,*
they feared the multitudes,
because they *took* him for
a prophet.

[1] M. *add* 26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.
[2] M. *or* held John to be a prophet indeed.

§ 64. A QUESTION

Mark xi.

33 And they answered Jesus and say,
We know not.
And Jesus saith unto them,
Neither tell I you
by what authority I do these things.

Matt. xxi.

27 And they answered Jesus, and said,
We know not.
He *also* said unto them,
Neither tell I you
by what authority I do these things.

§ 65. THE PARABLE OF

Mark xii.

1 And he began to speak unto *them in* parables.
A man 'planted a vineyard,

and set a hedge about it,
and digged a *pit for* the winepress,
and built a tower',[a]
and let it out to husbandmen,
and went into another country.
2 And at the season
he sent to the husbandmen a servant,
that he might receive *from the husbandmen*
of the fruits of the vineyard.
3 And they took him, and beat him,
and sent him away empty.
4 And *again* he sent unto them another servant;
and him they *wounded in the head*,
and handled shamefully.
5 And he sent another;
and him they killed:
and *many* others;
beating some, and killing some.
6 *He had yet one*, a beloved son:
he sent him *last* unto them, saying,
They will reverence my son.
7 But those husbandmen
said among themselves,
This is the heir;
come, let us kill him,
and the inheritance *shall* be ours.
8 And they took him, and killed him,
and cast him forth out of the vineyard.
9 What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do?

he will come and destroy the husbandmen,

and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 Have ye not read *even this* scripture;
'The stone which the builders rejected,
The same was made the head of the corner:
11 This was from the Lord,
And it is marvellous in our eyes?'[b]

12 And they sought to lay hold on him;
and they feared the multitude;

for they perceived that he spake the parable against them:
and they left him, and went away.

Matt. xxi.

33 *Hear another* parable:
There was a man *that was a householder*, which 'planted
vineyard,
and set a hedge about it,
and digged a winepress *in it*,
and built a tower,'[a]
and let it out to husbandmen,
and went into another country.
34 And *when* the season *of the fruits drew near*,
he sent *his* servants to the husbandmen,
to receive
his fruits.
35 And the husbandmen took *his* servants, and beat *one*,

and killed another,
and stoned another.
36 *Again, he sent* other servants *more than the first:*
and they did unto them in like manner.
37 But *afterward* he sent unto them his son,
saying,
They will reverence my son.
38 But the husbandmen, when they saw the son,
said among themselves,
This is the heir;
come, let us kill him,
and *take* his inheritance.
39 And they took him, and cast him forth
out of the vineyard, and killed him.
40 *When* therefore the lord of the vineyard *shall come*,
what will he do unto *those husbandmen?*
41 *They say unto him*, He will *miserably* destroy *those mise*
able men,
and will *let out* the vineyard unto other *husbandmen*,
which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.
42 Jesus saith unto them,
Did ye *never* read *in* the scriptures,
'The stone which the builders rejected,
The same was made the head of the corner:
This was from the Lord,
And it is marvellous in our eyes?'[b]
43 *Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be take*
away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing for
the fruits thereof.
44 [1] And he that falleth on this stone
shall be broken to pieces:
but on whomsoever it shall fall,
it will scatter him as dust.
46 And *when* they sought to lay hold on him,
they feared the multitudes, *because they took him for a proph*
45 And *when* the chief priests and *Pharisees heard his parabl*
they perceived that he spake of them.

[a] Isa. v. 1.

[b] Ps. cxviii. 22–23.

BOUT AUTHORITY (*continued*).

Luke xx.

7 And they answered,
that they knew not *whence it was.*
8 And Jesus said unto them,
Neither tell I you
by what authority I do these things.

HE VINEYARD.

Luke xx.

9 And he began to speak unto *the people this* parable:
A man 'planted a vineyard',[a]

and let it out to husbandmen,
and went into another country *for a long time.*
10 And at the season
he sent unto the husbandmen a servant,
that *they should give* him
of the fruit of the vineyard:
but the husbandmen beat him,
and sent him away empty.
11 And he sent *yet* another servant:
and him *also* they *beat,*
and handled him shamefully, *and sent him away empty.*
12 And he sent *yet a third:*
and him *also* they *wounded, and cast him forth.*

1 . . . him also they beat . . .]
13 And *the lord of the vineyard* said, *What shall I do?*
I will send my beloved son:
it may be they will reverence him.
14 But when the husbandmen saw him,
they *reasoned* one with another, saying,
This is the heir:
let us kill him.
that the inheritance *may* be ours.
15 And they cast him forth out of the vineyard,
and killed him.
What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He will come and destroy *these* husbandmen,

and will give the vineyard unto others.
And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.
17 But he *looked upon them*, and said,
What then is this that is written,
'The stone which the builders rejected,
The same was made the head of the corner?'[b]

18 Every one that falleth on that stone
shall be broken in pieces;
but on whomsoever it shall fall,
it will scatter him as dust.
And the *scribes* and the chief priests
sought to lay *hands* on him *in that very hour*;
and they feared the *people:*
for they perceived that he spake this parable against them.

Cf. Matt. xxii.

22 . . . And when they heard it, they marvelled, and left him,
and went their way.

[1] M. *omit v.* 44.

§ 66. A QUESTION ABOUT

Mark xii.

13 And they send *unto him certain of* the Pharisees
and of the Herodians,
that they might *catch* him in talk.
14 *And when they were come,*
they say unto him, Master,
we know that thou art true,
and carest not for any one:
for thou regardest not the person of men,
but of a truth teachest the way of God:

Is it lawful to give tribute [a] unto Caesar, or not?
15 *Shall we give, or shall we not give?*
But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them,
Why tempt ye me?
bring me a penny, *that I may see it.*
16 And they brought it.
And he saith unto them,
Whose is this image and superscription
And they said unto him, Caesar's.
17 And Jesus said unto them,
Render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's,
and unto God the things that are God's.

And they marvelled *greatly* at him.

Matt. xxii.

15 Then went the Pharisees, and *took counsel*
how they might *ensnare* him in his talk.
16 And they send to him *their disciples,* with the Herodians,

saying, Master,
we know that thou art true,
and teachest the way of God *in* truth,
and carest not for any one:
for thou regardest not the person of men.
17 *Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou?*
Is it lawful to give tribute [a] unto Caesar, or not?

18 But Jesus perceived their *wickedness,* and said,
Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?
19 Shew me *the tribute money.*
And they brought unto him a penny.
20 And he saith unto them,
Whose is this image and superscription?
21 They say unto him, Caesar's.
Then saith he unto them,
Render therefore unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's
and unto God the things that are God's.

22 And *when they heard it,* they marvelled,
and left him, and went their way.

§ 67. A QUESTION ABOUT

Mark xii.

18 And there come unto him Sadducees,
which say that there is no resurrection;
and they asked him, saying,
19 Master, Moses wrote unto us,
'If a man's brother die,'
and *leave* a wife *behind* him,
'and *leave* no child,
that his brother should take his wife,
and raise up seed unto his brother.' [b]
20 There were seven brethren:
and the first took a wife,
and dying *left* no seed;
21 and the second *took her, and died,*
leaving no seed behind him;
and the third *likewise:*
22 and the seven left no seed.
Last of all the woman also died.
23 In the resurrection
whose wife shall she be of them?
for the seven had her to wife.
24 Jesus said unto them,
Is it not for this cause that ye err,
that ye know not the scriptures,
nor the power of God?
25 For *when they shall rise* from the dead,
they neither marry, nor are given in marriage;

but are as angels in heaven.

26 But as touching the dead, *that they* are raised;
have ye not read *in the book of* Moses,
in the place concerning the Bush,
how God *spake* unto *him,* saying,

Matt. xxii.

23 *On that day* there came to him Sadducees,
which say that there is no resurrection:
and they asked him, saying,
24 Master, Moses *said,*
'If a man die

having no children,
his brother shall *marry* his wife,
and raise up seed unto his brother.' [b]
25 *Now* there were *with us* seven brethren:
and the first *married*
and *deceased,* and *having* no seed *left his wife unto his brother*
26 *in like manner* the second *also,*

and the third,
unto the seventh.
27 And *after them* all the woman died.
28 In the resurrection therefore
whose wife shall she be of the seven?
for they *all* had her.
29 But Jesus *answered* and said unto them,
Ye do err,
not knowing the scriptures,
nor the power of God.
30 For in the resurrection
they neither marry, nor are given in marriage,

but are as angels in heaven.

31 But as touching the *resurrection of* the dead,
have ye not read

that which was spoken unto *you* by God, saying,

[a] κῆνσον, Mark and Matt.; φόρον, Luke.

[b] Deut. xxv. 5: cf. Gen. xxxviii. 8.

RIBUTE TO CAESAR

Luke xx.

And they watched him, and sent *forth spies,*
which feigned themselves to be righteous,
that they might *take hold* of his speech,
so as to deliver him up to the rule and to the authority of the governor.
And they *asked* him, saying, Master,
we know that thou *sayest and teachest rightly,*

and *acceptest* not the person of *any,*
but of a truth teachest the way of God:

Is it lawful *for us* to give *tribute* [a] unto Caesar, or not?

But he perceived their *craftiness,* and said unto them,

Shew me a penny.

Whose image and superscription *hath it?*
And they said, Caesar's.
And he said unto them,
Then render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's,
and unto God the things that are God's.
And they were not able to take hold of the saying before the people:
and they marvelled at *his answer,*
and held their peace.

HE RESURRECTION.

Luke xx.

And there came to him *certain* of the Sadducees,
they which say that there is no resurrection;
and they asked him, saying,
Master, Moses wrote unto us, that
'if a man's brother die,'
having a wife,
'and *he be childless,*
his brother should take the wife,
and raise up seed unto his brother.' [b]
There were *therefore* seven brethren:
and the first took a wife,
and died *childless;*
and the second;

and the third *took her;*
and *likewise* the seven *also* left no *children, and died.*
Afterward the woman also died.
In the resurrection therefore
whose wife of them shall she be?
for the seven had her to wife.
And Jesus said unto them,
The sons of this world marry, and are given in marriage:
but they that are accounted worthy to attain to that world,

and the resurrection from the dead,
neither marry, nor are given in marriage:
for neither can they die any more:
for they are *equal unto* the angels:
and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.
But that the dead are raised,
even Moses *shewed,*
in the place concerning the Bush,
when he called the Lord

§ 67. A QUESTION ABOUT

Mark xii.

'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac,
and the God of Jacob?' [a]
27 He is not the God of the dead, but of the living:
ye do greatly err.

Matt. xxii.

32 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac,
and the God of Jacob?' [a]
God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 *And when the multitudes heard it, they were astonished at his teaching.*

§ 68. THE TWO GREAT

Mark xii.

28 And one of the *scribes* came,
and heard them *questioning together,*
and knowing that he had *answered them well,*
asked him,
What commandment is the *first of all?*
29 Jesus *answered,*
The first is, 'Hear, O Israel;
The Lord our God, the Lord is one:
30 *and* thou shalt love the Lord thy God
with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,'
and with all thy mind, 'and with all thy strength.' [b]

31 The second is this,
'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.' [c]
There is none other commandment greater than these.

32 *And the scribe said unto him, Of a truth, Master, thou hast well said that 'he is one; and there is none other but he':* [d]
33 *and 'to love him with all the heart, and with all the' understanding, 'and with all the strength,' and 'to love his neighbour as himself,' is much more than all 'whole burnt offerings and sacrifices'* [e].
34 *And when Jesus saw that he* answered *discreetly,*
he said unto him,
Thou *art not far from the kingdom of God.*
And no man *after that*
durst ask him any question.

Matt. xxii.

34 But the *Pharisees,* when they heard
that he had *put the Sadducees to silence,*
35 gathered themselves together. | And one of *them,* a lawyer,
asked him *a question,* tempting him,
36 Master, which is the *great* commandment *in the law?*
37 And he said unto him,

'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God
with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,
and with all thy' [b] mind.
38 *This is the great and first commandment.*
39 And *a* second [2] *like unto it* is this,
'Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.' [c]
40 *On these two commandments hangeth the whole law, and the prophets.*

46 neither durst any man *from that day forth*
ask him any *more* questions.

§ 69. A QUESTION ABOU

Mark xii.

35 And Jesus *answered* and said,
as he taught in the temple,
How say *the scribes* that Christ is the son of David?
36 David himself said in the *Holy* Spirit,

'The Lord said unto my Lord,
Sit thou on my right hand,
Till I make thine enemies [1] the footstool of thy feet.' [g]
37 David *himself* calleth him Lord;
and *whence* is he his son?
And the common people heard him gladly.

Matt. xxii.

41 *Now while the Pharisees were gathered together,*
Jesus *asked them a question,* saying,
42 *What think ye of the Christ? whose son is he?*
They say unto him, The son of David.
43 *He saith unto them, How* then doth David in the Spi
call him Lord, saying,
44 'The Lord said unto my Lord,
Sit thou on my right hand,
Till I *put* thine enemies *underneath* thy feet'? [g]
45 *If* David then calleth him Lord,
how is he his son?
46 *And no man was able to answer him a word,*
neither durst any man from that day forth
ask him any more questions.

[a] Exod. iii. 6. [b] Deut. vi. 4–5. [c] Lev. xix. 18. [d] Deut. iv. 35, vi. 4. [e] 1 Sam. xv. 22. [f] Lev. xviii. 5. [g] Ps. cx.

HE RESURRECTION (*continued*).

Luke xx.

'the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac,
and the God of Jacob.'[a]
Now he is not the God of the dead, but of the living:
for all live unto him.
And certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said. | *For they durst not any more ask him any question.*

Cf. § 63 B.

OMMANDMENTS.

Luke x.

And *behold, a certain* lawyer
stood up and tempted him, saying,
Master, *what shall I do to inherit eternal life?*
And he said unto him,
What is written in the law? how readest thou?
And he answering said,
'Thou shalt love the Lord thy God
with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,
and with all thy strength,'[b] and with all thy mind;

Cf. § 58.

and 'thy neighbour as thyself.'[c]

And he said unto him,
Thou *hast* answered *right:*
'*this do, and thou shalt live.*'[f]

HE 'SON OF DAVID'.

Luke xx.

And he said unto them,

How say they that the Christ is David's son?
For David himself saith in the *book of Psalms,*

'The Lord said unto my Lord,
Sit thou on my right hand,
Till I make thine enemies the footstool of thy feet.'[g]
David *therefore* calleth him Lord,
and how is he his son?

For they durst not any more ask him any question.]

[1] M. underneath thy feet.

[2] M. *or* is like unto it.

Mark xii.

38 And *in his teaching* he said,

Beware of the scribes,

which desire to walk in long robes,
and *to have* salutations in the market-places,
39 and chief seats in the synagogues,
and chief places at feasts:
40 they which devour widows' houses,
and for a pretence make long prayers;
these shall receive greater condemnation.

Mark xii.

41 And he *sat down over against the treasury,*
and *beheld how* the *multitude*
cast *money* into the treasury:
and *many* that were rich cast in *much.*
42 And *there came* a poor widow,
and she cast in two mites, *which make a farthing.*
43 *And he called unto him his disciples,*
and said *unto them,* Verily I say unto you,
This poor widow cast in more
than all they *which are casting into the treasury:*
44 for they all did cast in of their superfluity;
but she of her want did cast in
all that she had, *even* all her living.

Mark xiii.

A.

1 And as he went *forth* out of the temple,

one of his disciples saith unto him,
Master, behold, what manner of stones,
and what manner of buildings!
2 And Jesus said unto *him,*
Seest *thou* these *great buildings?*
there shall not be left here one stone upon another,
which shall not be thrown down.

B.

3 And as he sat on the mount of Olives
over against the temple,
Peter and James and John and Andrew
asked him privately,
4 Tell us, when shall these things be?
and what shall be the sign
when these things are *all* about to *be accomplished?*
5 And Jesus *began* to say unto them,
Take heed that no man lead you astray.
6 Many shall come in my name,
saying, I am he;

§ 70. CONDEMNATION C

Matt. xxiii.

1 Then spake Jesus to the multitudes and to his disciple
saying,
2 The scribes *and Pharisees sit on Moses' seat:*
3 *all things therefore whatsoever they bid you, these do a*
observe: but do not ye after their works; for they say, a
4 *do not.* | *Yea, they bind heavy burdens*[1] *and grievous to*
borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themsel
5 *will not move them with their finger.* | *But all their wor*
they do for to be seen of men: for they make broad th
phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

6 and love the chief place at feasts,
and the chief seats in the synagogues,
7 and the salutations in the market-places,

8 *and to be called of men, Rabbi.* | *But be not ye called Rabb*
9 *for one is your teacher, and all ye are brethren.* | *And c*
no man your father on the earth: for one is your Fath
10 *which is in heaven.* | *Neither be ye called masters: for one*
your master, even the Christ.

§ 71. THE WIDOW

§ 72. ESCHATOLOGICA

Matt. xxiv.

1 And Jesus went out from the temple, *and was going*
his way;
and his disciples *came* to him
to shew him
the buildings of the temple.
2 But he *answered* and said unto *them,*
See ye not *all* these things? *verily I say unto you,*
There shall not be left here one stone upon another,
that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat on the mount of Olives,

the disciples
came unto him privately, saying,
Tell us, when shall these things be?
and what shall be the sign *of thy coming,*
and of the end of the world?
4 And Jesus *answered* and said unto them,
Take heed that no man lead you astray.
5 For many shall come in my name,
saying, I am *the Christ;*

THE SCRIBES.

Luke xx.

45 And *in the hearing of* all the people he said unto his disciples,

46 Beware of the scribes,

which desire to walk in long robes,
and love salutations in the market-places,
and chief seats in the synagogues,
and chief places at feasts;
47 which devour widows' houses,
and for a pretence make long prayers:
these shall receive greater condemnation.

Luke xi.

43 *Woe unto you Pharisees!*
for ye love the chief seats in the synagogues,
and the salutations in the market-places.

MITES.

Luke xxi.

1 And he *looked up*,
and *saw*
the rich men that were casting
their gifts into the treasury.
2 And *he saw* a *certain* poor widow
casting in *thither* two mites.

3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you,
This poor widow cast in more
than they all:
4 for all these did of their superfluity cast in *unto the gifts:*
but she of her want did cast in
all the living that she had.

DISCOURSE.

Luke xxi.

Cf. John viii. 20.

5 And as *some* spake of the temple,
how it was adorned with goodly stones
and offerings,
he said,
6 As for these things which ye *behold, the days will come*
in which there shall not be left here one stone upon another,
that shall not be thrown down.

7 And they asked him, saying,
Master, when *therefore* shall these things be?
and what shall be the sign
when these things are about to *come to pass?*
8 And he said,
Take heed that ye be not led astray:
for many shall come in my name,
saying, I am he; *and, The time is at hand:*

[1] M. *omit* and grievous to be borne.

Mark xiii.

and shall lead many astray.
7 And when ye shall hear of wars
and rumours of wars,
be not troubled:
'these things must needs come to pass'; [a]
but the end is not yet.
8 For 'nation shall rise against nation,
and kingdom against kingdom': [b]
there shall be earthquakes in divers places;
there shall be famines:
these things are the beginning of travail.

C.
9 But *take heed to yourselves:*
for they shall deliver you up to councils;
and in synagogues shall ye be *beaten;*
and before governors and kings shall ye *stand*
for my sake, for a testimony unto them.
10 And the gospel *must first* be preached
unto all the nations.

11 And when they *lead you to judgement,*

and deliver you up,

be not anxious beforehand what ye shall speak:

but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour,

that speak ye:

for it is not ye that speak,
but the Holy *Ghost.*
12 And brother shall deliver up brother to death,
and the father his child;
and 'children shall rise up against parents', [c]
and cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men
for my name's sake:
but he that endureth to the end,

the same shall be saved.

D.
14 But when ye see 'the abomination of desolation' [e]

standing *where he ought not*
(let him that readeth understand),
then let them that are in Judaea
flee into the mountains:
15 and let him that is on the housetop
not go down, *nor enter in,*
to take *anything* out of his house:
16 and let him that is in the field

Matt. xxiv.

and shall lead many astray.
6 And ye shall hear of wars
and rumours of wars:
see that ye be not troubled:
for 'these things must needs come to pass'; [a]
but the end is not yet.
7 For 'nation shall rise against nation,
and kingdom against kingdom': [b]
and there shall be famines and earthquakes
in divers places.
8 *But all* these things are the beginning of travail.

9a *Then* shall they deliver you up *unto tribulation,*
and shall *kill* you:

14 And *this* gospel *of the kingdom shall* be preached
in the whole world for a testimony unto all the nations;
and then shall the end come.

10 And *then* '*shall many stumble*', [d] and shall deliver up one
another, and shall hate one another.
11 *And many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead many*
12 *astray. | And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of*
the many shall wax cold.
9b and ye shall be hated of all *the nations*
for my name's sake.
13 But he that endureth to the end,

the same shall be saved.

15 When *therefore* ye see 'the abomination of desolation', [e]
which was spoken of by Daniel the prophet,
standing *in the holy place*
(let him that readeth understand),
16 then let them that are in Judaea
flee unto the mountains:
17 let him that is on the housetop
not go down
to take out *the things that are* in his house:
18 and let him that is in the field

[a] Dan. ii. 28. [b] Isa. xix. 2. [c] Mic. vii. 6. [d] Dan. xi. 41 (LXX). [e] Dan. ix. 27, xii. 11.

DISCOURSE (*continued*).

Luke xxi.

go ye not after them.
9 And when ye shall hear of wars
and *tumults,*
be not *terrified:*
for 'these things must needs come to pass' [a] *first;*
but the end is not *immediately.*
10 *Then said he unto them,* 'Nation shall rise against nation,
and kingdom against kingdom': [b]
11 and there shall be *great* earthquakes, and in divers places
famines *and pestilences;*
and there shall be terrors and great signs from heaven.

12 *But before all these things,*
they shall lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you,
delivering you up
to the synagogues *and prisons,*
bringing you before kings and governors
13 for my *name's* sake. *It shall turn unto you* for a testimony.

14 *Settle it therefore in your hearts,*

not to *meditate* beforehand how to answer:

15 for *I will give you a mouth and wisdom,*

which all your adversaries shall not be able to withstand or to gainsay.

16 But ye shall be delivered up
even by parents, and brethren,
and kinsfolk, and friends;
and *some of you* shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all men
for my name's sake.

18 *And not a hair of your head shall perish.*

19 *In your patience ye shall win your souls.*

20 But when ye see *Jerusalem compassed with armies,*
then know that her desolation is at hand.

21 Then let them that are in Judaea
flee unto the mountains;
and let *them that are in the midst of her depart out;* and
let not *them* that *are in the country enter therein.*

Matt. x.

17 But *beware of men:*
for they will deliver you up to councils,
and in their synagogues they will *scourge* you;
18 *yea,* and before governors and kings shall ye be brought
for my sake, for a testimony to them

and to the *Gentiles.*

Luke xii.

19 But when they
deliver you up,
be not anxious how or
what ye shall speak:
for it shall be given you
in that hour
what ye shall speak.

11 And when they *bring you*
before the synagogues,
and the rulers, and the
authorities,
be not anxious how or
what ye shall answer, or
what ye shall say:
12 for the Holy Spirit *shall*
teach you in that *very*
hour
what ye *ought to say.*

20 For it is not ye that speak,
but the Spirit *of your Father that speaketh in you.*
21 And brother shall deliver up brother to death,
and the father his child:
and 'children shall rise up against parents',[c]
and cause them to be put to death.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men
for my name's sake:
but he that endureth to the end.

the same shall be saved.

[Cf. Matt. x.
30 . . . but the very hairs of
your head are all num-
bered.
Luke xii.
7 . . . but the very hairs of
your head are all num-
bered.]

Luke xvii.

31 *In that day,* he which shall be on the housetop,
and *his goods* in the house, let him not go down
to take them away:
and let him that is in the field *likewise*

Mark xiii.

not 'return back'[a] to take his cloke.

17 But woe unto them that are with child
and to them that give suck in those days!
18 And pray ye that it be not in the winter.

19 For *those days* shall be 'tribulation,
such as there hath not been *the like*
from the beginning of the *creation*' *which God created*
'until now,'[b] and never shall be.
20 And except *the Lord* had shortened the days,
no flesh would have been saved:
but for the elect's sake, *whom he chose,*
he shortened the days.

21 And then if any man shall say unto you,
Lo, here is the Christ; or Lo, there;
believe it not:

22 for there shall arise false Christs, and 'false prophets,
and shall shew signs and wonders,'[c]
that they may lead astray, if possible, the elect.
23 *But take ye heed:*
behold, I have told you *all things* beforehand.

24 But in those days, after that tribulation,
'the sun shall be darkened,
and the moon shall not give her light,
25 and the stars shall be falling from heaven,

and the powers *that are in* the heavens shall be shaken.'[d]

26 And then shall they see 'the Son of man
coming in clouds'[e] with great power and glory.
27 And then shall he send forth the angels,

and 'shall gather together' his elect
'from the four winds,

Matt. xxiv.

not 'return back'[a] to take his cloke.

19 But woe unto them that are with child
and to them that give suck in those days!
20 And pray ye that *your flight* be not in the winter,
neither on a sabbath:
21 for *then* shall be great 'tribulation,
such as hath not been
from the beginning of the *world*
until now,'[b] no, nor ever shall be.
22 And except those days had *been* shortened,
no flesh would have been saved:
but for the elect's sake
those days *shall be* shortened.

23 Then if any man shall say unto you,
Lo, here is the Christ, or, Here;
believe it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and 'false prophets,
and shall shew *great* signs and wonders';[c]
so as to lead astray, if possible, *even* the elect.

25 Behold, I have told you beforehand.
26 *If therefore they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in th*
wilderness; go not forth: Behold, he is in the inner chamber
believe it not.
27 For as the lightning *cometh forth* from *the east,*

and *is seen* even unto *the west;*
so shall be *the coming of* the Son of man.
28 *Wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathere*
together.

29 But *immediately,* after the tribulation of those days,
'the sun shall be darkened,
and the moon shall not give her light,
and the stars shall fall from heaven,

and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken':[d]
30 *and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven*
and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn,
and they shall see 'the Son of man
coming on the clouds *of heaven*'[e] with power and great glor
31 And he shall send forth his angels *with a great* [1]*sound* [1]
a trumpet,
and *they* 'shall gather together' his elect
'from the four winds,

[a] Gen. xix. 26. [b] Dan. xii. 1. [c] Deut. xiii. 1-3. [d] Isa. xiii. 10, xxxiv. 4. [e] Dan. vii. 13.

ISCOURSE (*continued*).

Luke xxi.

[2] *For these are days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.*
[3] Woe unto them that are with child
and to them that give suck in those days!

for *there* shall be great *distress upon the land,*
and wrath unto this people.
[4] *And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all the nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.*

[5] And *there shall be signs* in sun
and moon
and stars;
and upon the earth distress of nations, in perplexity for the
[6] *roaring of the sea and the billows;* | *men fainting for fear,*
and for expectation of the things which are coming on the world:
'for the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.' [d]

[7] And then shall they see 'the Son of man
coming in a cloud' [e] with power and great glory.
But when these things begin to come to pass, look up, and lift up your heads; because your redemption draweth nigh.

Luke xvii.

[3] not 'return back.' [a] *Remember Lot's wife.*

Luke xvii.

[20] *And being asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God cometh, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation:*
[21] *neither* shall they say,
Lo, here! or, There!
for lo, the kingdom of God is within you.

[22] *And he said unto his disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.*
[23] And they shall say to you,
Lo, there! Lo, here!
go not away, nor follow after them:

Cf. Matt. xxiv.
[11] And *many* false prophets shall arise,

and shall lead *many* astray.

Luke xvii.

[24] for as the lightning, *when it lighteneth* out of *the one part under heaven,*
shineth unto the *other part under heaven;*
so shall the Son of man be [2] *in his day.*
[25] *But first must he suffer many things and be rejected of this generation.*

[1] M. *omit* sound of a.

[2] M. *omit* in his day.

§ 72. ESCHATOLOGICAL

Mark xiii.

from *the uttermost part* of the earth
to *the uttermost part* of heaven.'[a]

28 Now from the fig tree learn her parable:

when her branch is now become tender,
and putteth forth its leaves,
ye know that the summer is nigh;
29 even so ye also,
when ye see these things coming to pass,
know ye that he is nigh, even at the doors.
30 Verily I say unto you,
This generation shall not pass away,
until all these things be accomplished.
31 Heaven and earth shall pass away:
but my words shall not pass away.
32 But of that day or that hour knoweth no one,
not even the angels in heaven,
neither the Son, but the Father.

33 *Take ye heed,* watch [1]*and pray:*
for ye know not when the *time* is.

34 It is as when a man,
sojourning in another country,
having left his house,
and given *authority* to his servants,
to each one his work, commanded also the porter to watch. |
35 *Watch therefore: for ye know not when the Lord of the*
house cometh, whether at even, or at midnight, or at cock-
36 *crowing, or in the morning;* | *lest coming suddenly he find*
37 *you sleeping.* | *And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.*

Matt. xxiv.

from *one end* of heaven
to *the other.*'[a]

32 Now from the fig tree learn her parable:

when her branch is now become tender,
and putteth forth its leaves,
ye know that the summer is nigh;
33 even so ye also,
when ye see *all* these things,
know ye that he is nigh, even at the doors.
34 Verily I say unto you,
This generation shall not pass away,
till all these things be accomplished.
35 Heaven and earth shall pass away,
but my words shall not pass away.
36 But of that day and hour knoweth no one,
not even the angels of heaven,
[2] neither the Son, but the Father *only.*

37 And as *were* the days of Noah,
so shall be *the coming* of the Son of man.
38 *For as in those days which were before the flood*
they were eating and drinking,
marrying and giving in marriage,
39 until the day that Noah entered into the ark,
and *they knew not until* the flood came,
and *took* them all *away;*

so shall be
the *coming of* the Son of man
40 *Then shall two men be in the field; one is taken, and one*
41 *left:* | *two women shall be grinding at the mill; one is taken*
and one is left.
42 Watch therefore:
for ye know not on what day *your Lord cometh.*

§ 73. THE PRIEST

Mark xiv.

1 Now after two days was the feast of the passover
and the unleavened bread:

and the chief priests and the scribes

Matt. xxvi.

1 *And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these wor*
2 *he said unto his disciples,* | *Ye know that*
after two days the passover *cometh,*

and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified.
3 Then *were gathered together* the chief priests,

[a] Zech. ii. 6; Deut. xxx. 4.

ISCOURSE (*continued*).

Luke xxi.

29 And *he spake to them* a parable: *Behold* the fig tree, *and all the trees:*
30 when *they* now *shoot forth,*
ye *see it* and know *of your own selves* }
that the summer is now nigh. }
31 Even so ye also,
when ye see these things coming to pass,
know ye that *the kingdom of God* is nigh.
32 Verily I say unto you,
This generation shall not pass away,
till all things be accomplished.
33 Heaven and earth shall pass away:
but my words shall not pass away.
34 *But take heed to yourselves, lest haply your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this*
35 *life, and that day come on you suddenly as a snare: | for so shall it come upon all them that dwell on the face of all the earth.*

Luke xvii.

26 And as *it came to pass in* the days of Noah,
even so shall *it* be *also in the days* of the Son of man.

27 They ate, they drank,
they married, they were given in marriage,
until the day that Noah entered into the ark,
and the flood came,
and *destroyed* them all.
28 *Likewise even as it came to pass in the days of Lot; they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they*
29 *builded; | but in the day that Lot went out from Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all:*
30 *After the same manner* shall *it* be
in the day that the Son of man *is revealed.*

36 But watch ye *at every season,*
making supplication, that ye may prevail to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

Matt. xxv.

13 Watch therefore,
for ye know not the day nor the *hour.*

Matt. xxv.

14 For it is as when a man,
going into another country,

called his own servants,
and delivered unto them
his goods . . .

Luke xix.

12 A *certain nobleman*
went into a *far* country,

to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.
13 And he called *ten* servants
of his, and gave them
ten pounds . . .

LOT.

Luke xxii.

1 Now the feast of unleavened bread *drew nigh* }
which is called the Passover. }

2 And the chief priests and the scribes

[1] M. *omit* and pray.

[2] M. *omit* neither the son.

§ 73. THE PRIESTS

Mark xiv.

sought how they might take him
with subtilty, and kill him:
2 for they said, Not during the feast,
lest *haply there shall be* a tumult of the people.

Matt. xxvi.

and the elders of the people, unto the court of the high priest
who was called Caiaphas;
4 and they *took counsel together* that they might take Jesus
by subtilty, and kill him.
5 But they said, Not during the feast,
lest a tumult *arise* among the people.

§ 74. THE ANOINTING

Mark xiv.

3 And while he was in Bethany
in the house of Simon the leper,
as he sat at meat,
there came a woman
having an alabaster cruse
of ointment *of spikenard very costly;*
and she brake the cruse,
and poured it over his head.
4 But *there were some that* had indignation
among themselves, saying,
To what purpose hath this waste
of the ointment been made?
5 For this ointment might have been sold
for *above three hundred pence,*
and given to the poor.
And they murmured against her.
6 But Jesus said, *Let her alone;*
why trouble ye *her?*
she hath wrought a good work on me.
7 For ye have the poor always with you,
and whensoever ye will ye can do them good:
but me ye have not always.
8 She hath done *what she could:*
she hath *anointed* my body *aforehand*
for the burying.
9 And verily I say unto you,
Wheresoever the gospel shall be preached
throughout the whole world,
that also which this woman hath done
shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

Matt. xxvi.

6 Now when Jesus was in Bethany,
in the house of Simon the leper,
7b as he sat at meat.
7a there came *unto him* a woman
having an alabaster cruse
of *exceeding precious* ointment,

and she poured it upon his head,
8 But *when the disciples saw it, they* had indignation,
saying,
To what purpose is this waste?

9 For this ointment might have been sold
for *much,*
and given to the poor.

10 But Jesus *perceiving it* said unto them,
Why trouble ye *the woman?*
for she hath wrought a good work upon me.
11 For ye have the poor always with you;

but me ye have not always.
12 For in that she *poured this ointment*
upon my body, she did it *to prepare me*
for burial.
13 Verily I say unto you,
Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached
in the whole world,
that also which this woman hath done
shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

§ 75. THE TREACHERY

Mark xiv.

10 And Judas Iscariot,
he that was *one* [a] of the twelve,
went away unto the chief priests,
that he might deliver him unto them.
11 And they, *when they heard it,* were glad,
and *promised* to give him money.
And he sought how he might *conveniently*
deliver him unto them.

Matt. xxvi.

14 Then *one* [a] of the twelve,
who was called Judas Iscariot,
went unto the chief priests,
15 *and said, What are ye willing to give me,*
and I will deliver him unto *you?*
And they *weighed unto him thirty pieces of silver.*
16 And *from that time* he sought opportunity
to deliver him unto them.

[a] ὁ εἷς, Mark; εἷς, Matt.

PLOT (*continued*).

Luke xxii.

sought how they might
put him *to death;*

for they feared the people.

AT BETHANY.

|Cf. Luke vii.
36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat
with him. And he entered into the Pharisee's house, and
37 sat down to meat. | And behold, a woman which was in
the city, a sinner; and when she knew that he was sitting
at meat in the Pharisee's house, she brought an alabaster
38 cruse of ointment, | and standing behind at his feet,
weeping, she began to wet his feet with her tears, and
wiped them with the hair of her head, and kissed his
39 feet, and anointed them with the ointment. | Now when
the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake
within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet,
would have perceived who and what manner of woman
40 this is which toucheth him, that she is a sinner. | And
Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat
41 to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. | A certain
lender had two debtors: the one owed five hundred
42 pence, and the other fifty. | When they had not *wherewith*
to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them therefore
43 will love him most? | Simon answered and said, He,
I suppose, to whom he forgave the most. And he said
44 unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. | And turning to the
woman, he said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman?
I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for
my feet: but she hath wetted my feet with her tears, and
45 wiped them with her hair. | Thou gavest me no kiss:
but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss
46 my feet. | My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but
47 she hath anointed my feet with ointment. | Wherefore
I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven;
for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the*
48 *same* loveth little. | And he said unto her, Thy sins are
49 forgiven. | And they that sat at meat with him began to
say within themselves, Who is this that even forgiveth
50 sins? | And he said unto the woman, Thy faith hath
saved thee; go in peace.]

Cf. John xii. 1–8.

OF JUDAS.

Luke xxii.

3 And *Satan entered into* Judas who was called Iscariot,
being *of the number* of the twelve.
4 And he went away, and *communed with* the chief priests *and captains,*
how he might deliver him unto them.
5 And they were glad,
and *covenanted* to give him money.
6 And he *consented,* and sought opportunity
to deliver him unto them *in the absence of the multitude.*

Mark xiv.

12 And on the first day of unleavened bread,
when they sacrificed the passover,
his disciples say unto him,
Where wilt thou that we *go and* make ready
that thou mayest eat the passover?
13 And he sendeth *two of his disciples*,

and saith unto them, Go into the city,
and there shall meet you a man
bearing a pitcher of water: follow him;
14 and wheresoever he shall enter in,
say to the goodman of the house,
The Master saith, Where is *my* guest-chamber,
where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?
15 And he will *himself* shew you a large upper room
furnished *and ready:*
and there make ready *for us.*
16 And the disciples went *forth, and came into the city,*
and found as he had said unto them:
and they made ready the passover.

17 And when it was evening
he *cometh* with the twelve.
18 And as they sat and were eating,
Jesus said, Verily I say unto you,
One of you shall betray me,
'*even he that eateth with me.*' [a]
19 And they *began* to be sorrowful,
and to say unto him *one by one*, Is it I?
20 And he said unto them,
It is one of the twelve,
he that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 For the Son of man goeth,
even as it is written of him:
but woe unto that man
through whom the Son of man is betrayed
good were it for that man
if he had not been born.

22 And as they were eating,
he took bread,

and when he had blessed, he brake it,
and gave to them,
and said, Take ye:
this is my body.

23 And he took a cup,
and when he had given thanks,
he gave to them;
and *they* all *drank* of it.
24 And he said unto them,
This is my 'blood of the[1] covenant', [b]
which is shed for many.
25 *Verily* I say unto you,
I will *no more* drink of the fruit of the vine,
until that day when I drink it new
in the kingdom of heaven.
26 And when they had sung a hymn,
they went out unto the mount of Olives.

[a] Ps. xli. 10.

Matt. xxvi.

17 Now on the first day of unleavened bread

the disciples *came* to Jesus, saying,
Where wilt thou that we make ready
for thee to eat the passover?

18 And he said, Go into the city

to such a man, and say unto him,
The Master saith, *My time is at hand;*
I keep the passover *at thy house* with my disciples.

19 And the disciples
did as Jesus *appointed* them;
and they made ready the passover.

20 Now when even was come,
he was sitting *at meat* with the twelve [2] *disciples;*
21 and as they were eating,
he said, Verily I say unto you,
that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were *exceeding* sorrowful,
and began to say unto him *every one*, Is it I, *Lord?*
23 And he *answered* and said,

He that dipped his hand with me in the dish,
the same shall betray me,
24 The Son of man goeth,
even as it is written of him:
but woe unto that man
through whom the Son of man is betrayed!
good were it for that man
if he had not been born.
25 *And Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Is it I*
Rabbi? He saith unto him, Thou hast said.

26 And as they were eating,
Jesus took bread,

and blessed, and brake it;
and he gave to *the disciples,*
and said, Take, *eat;*
this is my body.

27 And he took [3] a cup,
and gave thanks,
and gave to them, saying,
28 *Drink ye* all of it;

for this is my 'blood of the[1] covenant', [b]
which is shed for many *unto remission of sins.*
29 *But* I say unto you,
I will not drink henceforth of *this* fruit of the vine,
until that day when I drink it new
with you in *my Father's* kingdom.
30 And when they had sung a hymn,
they went out unto the mount of Olives.

[b] Exod. xxiv. 8.

UPPER.

Luke xxii.

7 And the day of unleavened bread came,
on which the passover *must be* sacrificed.
9 And they said unto him,
Where wilt thou that we make ready?

8 And he sent *Peter and John*, saying,
Go *and make ready for us the passover, that we may eat.*
10 And he said unto them, *Behold, when ye are entered* into the city,
there shall meet you a man
bearing a pitcher of water; follow him
into the *house* whereinto he goeth.
11 And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house,
The Master saith *unto thee*, Where is *the* guest-chamber,
where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?
12 And he will show you a large upper room
furnished:
there make ready.
13 And they went,
and found as he had said unto them:
and they made ready the passover.

14 And when *the hour* was come,
he sat down, and the *apostles* with him.

15 And he said unto them, *With desire I have desired to eat this*
16 *passover with you before I suffer:* | *for I say unto you, I will*
not eat it, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

21 But *behold*, the hand of him that betrayeth me
is with me *on the table.*
22 For the Son of man *indeed* goeth,
as it hath been *determined:*
but woe unto that man
through whom he is betrayed!

23 *And they began to question among themselves, which of them*
it was that should do this thing.

Cf. 1 Cor. xi.

23 For I received of the Lord that which also
I delivered unto you, how that
the Lord Jesus in the night in which he was betrayed
took bread;

19 And he took bread,

and when he had *given thanks*, he brake it,
and gave to them,
saying,
This is my body[4] *which is given for you:*
this do in remembrance of me.

24 and when he had given thanks, he brake it,

and said,
This is my body, which is for you:
this do in remembrance of me.

17 And he *received* a cup,
and when he had given thanks,
he said, *Take this*
and *divide it among yourselves:*
20 *And the cup in like manner after supper*, saying,
This *cup* is the *new* covenant *in* my blood,
even that[5] which is *poured out* for *you.*

25 In like manner also the cup, after supper, saying,
This cup is the new covenant in my blood:
this do, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.

18 *for* I say unto you,
I will not drink from henceforth of the fruit of the vine,
until
the kingdom *of God shall come.*
39 And *he came* out, and went, *as his custom was,*
unto the mount of Olives; *and the disciples also followed him.*

M. *add* new. [2] M. *omit* disciples. [3] M. the cup. [4] M. *omit* which is given for you. [5] M. *omit* which is poured out for you.

§ 77. PREDICTION O

Mark xiv.

27 And Jesus saith unto them,
All ye shall be offended:
for it is written, 'I will smite the shepherd,
and the sheep shall be scattered abroad.' [a]
28 Howbeit, after I am raised up,
I will go before you into Galilee.
29 But Peter said unto him,
Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.
30 And Jesus saith unto him,
Verily I say unto thee,
that thou to-day, *even* this night,
before the cock crow *twice*,
shalt deny me thrice.
31 But he *spake exceeding vehemently*,
If I must die with thee, I will not deny thee.
And in like manner also said *they* all.

Matt. xxvi.

31 Then saith Jesus unto them,
All ye shall be offended *in me this night:*
for it is written, 'I will smite the shepherd,
and the sheep' *of the flock* 'shall be scattered abroad.' [a]
32 But after I am raised up,
I will go before you into Galilee.
33 But Peter *answered* and said unto him,
If all shall be offended *in thee*, I will *never be offended.*
34 Jesus said unto him,
Verily I say unto thee,
that this night,
before the cock crow,
thou shalt deny me thrice.
35 Peter saith unto him,
Even if I must die with thee, *yet* will I not deny thee.
Likewise also said all *the disciples.*

§ 7

Mark xiv.

32 And they come unto a place
which was named Gethsemane:
and he saith unto his disciples,
Sit ye here, while I pray.
33 And he taketh with him Peter and *James and John*,
and began to be *greatly amazed*,
and sore troubled.
34 And he saith unto them,
My soul is exceeding sorrowful even unto death:
abide ye here, and watch.
35 And he went forward a little,
and fell *on the ground*,
and prayed *that, if it were possible,*
the hour might pass away from him.
36 And he said, *Abba*, Father
all things are possible *unto thee;*
remove this cup from me:
howbeit not *what* I will, but *what* thou wilt.

Matt. xxvi.

36 Then cometh Jesus *with* them unto a place
called Gethsemane,
and saith unto his disciples,
Sit ye here, while I *go yonder and* pray.
37 And he took with him Peter and *the two sons of Zebedee*
and began to be *sorrowful*
and sore troubled.
38 Then saith he unto them,
My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death:
abide ye here, and watch *with me.*
39 And he went forward a little,
and fell *on his face*,
and prayed,
saying, *O my* Father,
if it be possible,
let this cup *pass away* from me:
nevertheless, not *as* I will, but *as* thou wilt.

37 And he cometh,
and findeth them sleeping,
and saith unto Peter,
Simon, sleepest *thou?*
couldest *thou* not watch one hour?
38 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation:
the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.
39 And again he went away, and prayed,
saying *the same words.*

40 And again he came, and found them sleeping,
for their eyes were very heavy;
and they wist not what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time,
and saith unto them,
Sleep on now, and take your rest:
it is enough; the hour is *come;*
behold, the Son of man is betrayed
into the hands of sinners.
42 Arise, let us be going:
behold, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

40 And he cometh unto the disciples,
and findeth them sleeping,
and saith unto Peter,
What, could *ye* not watch *with me* one hour?
41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation:
the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.
42 Again *a second time* he went away, and prayed,
saying, *O my Father, if this cannot pass away*
except I drink it, thy will be done.
43 And he came again, and found them sleeping,
for their eyes were heavy.
44 *And he left them again, and went away,*
and prayed a third time, *saying again the same words.*
45 Then cometh he *to the disciples*,
and saith unto them,
Sleep on now, and take your rest:
behold, the hour is *at hand*,
and the Son of man is betrayed
unto the hands of sinners.
46 Arise, let us be going:
behold, he is at hand that betrayeth me.

[a] Zech. xiii. 7.

T. PETER'S DENIAL.

Luke xxii.

31 *Simon, Simon, behold, Satan asked to have you, that he*
32 *might sift you as wheat: | but I made supplication for thee,*
that thy faith fail not: and do thou, when once thou hast
turned again, stablish thy brethren.

33 And he said unto him,
Lord, I am ready to go both to prison and to death.
34 And he said,
I *tell* thee, *Peter*,

the cock shall not crow this day,
until thou shalt thrice deny *that thou knowest* me.

ETHSEMANE.

Luke xxii.

39 And he came *out, and went, as his custom was,*
unto *the mount of Olives;* and the disciples also *followed* him.
40 *And when he was at* the place, he said unto them,
Pray *that ye enter not into temptation.*

41 And he *was parted from them about a stone's cast;*
and he *kneeled down*
and prayed,

42 saying, Father,
if *thou be willing,*
remove this cup from me:
nevertheless not my *will*, but thine, *be done.*
43 *And there appeared unto him an angel from heaven,*
44 *strengthening him. | And being in an agony he prayed more*
earnestly: and his sweat became as it were great drops of
blood falling down upon the ground.
45 And *when he rose up from his prayer*, he came unto the disciples,
and found them sleeping *for sorrow*,
and said unto *them*,
Why sleep *ye?*

rise and pray, that ye enter not into temptation. [46b Pray that ye enter not into temptation.]

[1] M. *omit* verses 43, 44.

§ 79. THE

Mark xiv.

43 And *straightway*, while he yet spake,
cometh Judas, one of the twelve,
and with him a multitude with swords and staves,
from the chief priests *and the scribes* and the elders.
44 Now he that betrayed him had given them a *token*, saying,
Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he;
take him, *and lead him away safely.*
45 And *when he was come,*
straightway he came to him, and saith,
Rabbi; and kissed him.

46 And they laid hands on him, and took him.

47 But a certain one of them that *stood by*
drew his sword,
and smote the servant of the high priest,
and struck off his ear.

48 And Jesus *answered* and said unto *them*,

Are ye come out, as against a robber,
with swords and staves to seize me?
49 I was daily with you in the temple teaching,
and ye took me not:
but this is *done*
that the scriptures might be fulfilled.
50 And *they* all left him, and fled.
51 *And a certain young man followed with him, having a linen*
cloth cast about him, over his naked body: and they lay hold
52 *on him;* | *but he left the linen cloth, and fled naked.*

Matt. xxvi.

47 And while he yet spake,
lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came,
and with him a *great* multitude with swords and staves,
from the chief priests and elders of *the people.*
48 Now he that betrayed him gave them a *sign*, saying,
Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he:
take him.
49 And
straightway he came to Jesus, and said,
Hail, Rabbi; and kissed him.
50 And Jesus said, *Friend,*
do that for which thou art come.
Then they *came* and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And *behold,* one of them that were with Jesus
stretched out his hand, and drew his sword,
and smote the servant of the high priest,
and struck off his ear.
52 Then saith Jesus *unto him, Put up again thy sword into it*
place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with th
53 *sword.* | *Or thinkest thou that I cannot beseech my Father*
and he shall even now send me more than twelve legions o
54 *angels?* | *How then should the scriptures be fulfilled, tha*
thus it must be?
55 *In that hour* said Jesus to the *multitudes,*

Are ye come out as against a robber
with swords and staves to seize me?
I sat daily in the temple preaching,
and ye took me not.
56 But *all* this is *come to pass,*
that the scriptures *of the prophets* might be fulfilled.
Then all *the disciples* left him, and fled.

§ 80. THE TRIAL

Mark xiv.

53 And they led Jesus away
to the high priest:
and *there come* together *with him*
all the *chief priests* and the elders and the scribes.

54 And Peter had followed him afar off,
even within, into the court of the high priest;
and he was sitting with the officers,
and *warming himself in the light of* the fire.

55 Now the chief priests and the whole council
sought witness against Jesus
to put him to death;
and found it not.
56 *For* many *bare* false witness against him,
and their witness agreed not together.
57 *And there stood up certain,*
and *bare false witness against him,* saying,
58 *We heard him* say,
I *will* destroy *this* temple *that is made with hands,*
and in three days I *will* build *another*
made without hands.

Matt. xxvi.

57 And they *that had taken* Jesus led him away
to the house of *Caiaphas* the high priest,
where the scribes and the elders
were gathered together.

58 But Peter followed him afar off,
unto the court of the high priest, *and entered* in,
and sat with the officers, *to see the end.*

59 Now the chief priests and the whole council
sought *false* witness against Jesus,
that they might put him to death;
60 and they found it not,
though many false witnesses *came.*

But afterwards came two,
and said,
61 *This man* said,
I *am able to* destroy the temple *of God,*
and *to* build it in three days.

ETRAYAL

Luke xxii.

[7] While he yet spake,
behold, a multitude, and *he that was called* Judas,
one of the twelve, *went before them;*

and
he *drew near* unto Jesus
to kiss him.
[8] But Jesus said unto him, *Judas,*
betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

[49] *And when* they that were about him *saw what would follow,*
they said, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?
[50] And a certain one of them

smote the servant of the high priest,
and struck off his *right* ear.
[51] But Jesus *answered* and said, *Suffer ye thus far.*
And he touched his ear, and healed him.

[52] And Jesus said unto the *chief priests, and captains of the temple, and elders,*
which were come against him,
Are ye come out, as against a robber,
with swords and staves?
[53] When I was daily with you in the temple,
ye *stretched* not *forth your hands against* me:
but this is *your hour,*
and the power of darkness.

EFORE CAIAPHAS.

Luke xxii.

[54] And they *seized* him, and led him away,
and brought him into the high priest's house.

But Peter followed afar off.
[55] And *when they had kindled* a fire *in the midst of* the court,
and *had sat down together,*
Peter sat *in the midst of them.*

§ 80. THE TRIA

Mark xiv.

59 *And not even so did their witness agree together.*

60 And the high priest stood up *in the midst,*
and *asked* Jesus, saying,
Answerest thou nothing?
what is it which these witness against thee?
61 But he held his peace, *and answered nothing.*
Again the high priest *asked* him, and saith unto him,

Art thou the Christ, the Son of *the Blessed?*
62 And Jesus said, *I am:*
and ye shall see 'the Son of man

sitting at the right hand of power,
and coming *with* the clouds of heaven.'[a]
63 And the high priest rent his *clothes,*
and saith,
What further need have we of witnesses?
64 Ye have heard the blasphemy:
what think ye?
And they *all condemned him to be* worthy of death.

65 And *some began* to spit on him,

and to cover his face,
and to buffet him,
and to say unto him, Prophesy:
and the *officers received* him with *blows* of their hands.

Matt. xxvi.

62 And the high priest stood up,
and said unto him,
Answerest thou nothing?
what is it which these witness against thee?
63 But Jesus held his peace.
And the high priest said unto him,
I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us
whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.
64 Jesus saith unto him, *Thou hast said:*
nevertheless I say unto you, Henceforth ye shall see 'th
Son of man
sitting at the right hand of power,
and coming *on* the clouds of heaven.'[a]
65 Then the high priest rent his *garments,*
saying, *He hath spoken blasphemy:*
what further need have we of witnesses?
behold, now ye have heard the blasphemy:
66 what think ye?
They *answered and said, He is* worthy of death.

67 Then did they spit in his face
and buffet him:
and *some smote* him with the *palms* of their hands, sayi
68 Prophesy *unto us, thou Christ:* who is he that struck th

§ 81. ST. PETER

Mark xiv.

66 And as Peter was *beneath* in the court,

there cometh *one* of the maids *of the high priest;*
67 and seeing Peter warming himself,
she looked upon him, and saith,
Thou also wast with *the Nazarene,* even Jesus.
68 But he denied, saying, I neither know
nor understand what thou sayest:
and he went out into the porch;
[1] *and the cock crew.*
69 And *the* maid saw him,
and *began again* to say to them that *stood by,*
This *is* one of them.
But he again denied it.
70 And after a little while *again*
they that stood by said to Peter,
Of a truth thou art one of them;
for *thou art* a Galilaean.
71 But he began to curse, and to swear,
I know not this man *of whom ye speak.*
72 And straightway *the second time* the cock crew.

And Peter *called to mind* the word,
how that Jesus said unto him,
Before the cock crow *twice,*
thou shalt deny me thrice.
[2] And *when he thought thereon,* he wept.

Matt. xxvi.

69 Now Peter was sitting *without* in the court:

and a maid came *unto him,*

saying,
Thou also wast with Jesus *the Galilaean.*
70 But he denied *before them all,* saying, I know not
what thou sayest.
71 And when he was gone out into the porch,

another[b] maid saw him,
and saith unto them that *were there,*
This man also *was with Jesus the Nazarene.*
72 And again he denied *with an oath, I know not the man.*
73 And after a little while
they that stood by *came* and said to Peter,
Of a truth thou also art one of them;
for *thy speech bewrayeth thee.*
74 Then began he to curse and to swear,
I know not the man.
And straightway the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembered the word
which Jesus had said,
Before the cock crow,
thou shalt deny me thrice.
And he went out, and wept bitterly.

[a] Dan. vii. 13.

[b] ἄλλη, Matt.: ἕτερος, Luke.

EFORE CAIAPHAS (*continued*).

Luke xxii.

[70] *And they all said,*
Art thou then the Son of God?
And he said unto them, *Ye say that I am.*

[7] If thou art the Christ, tell us.
But he said unto them . . .
[69] But from henceforth shall the Son of man
be seated at the right hand of *the* power *of God.*

[71] *And they said,* What further need have we of witness?
for we ourselves have heard *from his own mouth.*

[63] And *the men that held Jesus mocked* him,
and beat him.
[64] *And they blindfolded* him,
and *asked* him, saying,

Prophesy: who is he that struck thee?

[65] *And many other things spake they against him,*
reviling him.

ENIAL.

Luke xxii.

[56] And a *certain* maid seeing him
as he sat *in the light of the fire,*
and looking *stedfastly* upon him,
said,
This man also was with *him.*
[58] But he denied, saying, *Woman,* I know *him* not.

[59] And *after a little while another* [b] saw him,
and said,
Thou also *art* one of them.
But *Peter* said, *Man, I am not.*
[60] And after *the space of about one hour*
another confidently affirmed, saying,
Of a truth *this man* also *was with him:*
for *he is* a Galilaean.
[60] But *Peter said,*
Man, I know not *what thou sayest.*
And *immediately, while he yet spake,* the cock crew.
And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter.
And Peter remembered the word *of the Lord,*
how that he said unto him,
Before the cock crow *this day,*
thou shalt deny me thrice.
And he went out, and wept bitterly.

[1] M. *omit* and the cock crew.

[2] M. *or* And he began to weep.

§ 82. THE TRIA

Mark xv.

1 And *straightway* in the morning
the chief priests with the elders and scribes,
and *the whole council*,
held a consultation,

and bound Jesus, and *carried* him away,
and delivered him up to Pilate.

2 And *Pilate* asked him,
Art thou the King of the Jews?
And he answering saith unto him,
Thou sayest.
3 And the chief priests accused him *of many things.*

4 And Pilate *again asked* him, saying,
Answerest *thou* nothing?
behold how many things they *accuse* thee of.
5 But Jesus *no more* answered anything;
insomuch that *Pilate* marvelled.

6 Now at the feast
he used to release unto *them* one prisoner,

whom they *asked of him.*
7 And *there was one* called Barabbas,

lying bound with them that had made insurrection,
men who in the insurrection had committed murder.
8 *And the multitude went up,*
and began to ask him to do
as he was wont to do unto them.
9 And Pilate *answered* them, saying,
Will ye that I release unto you
the King of the Jews?
for he *perceived* that for envy they had delivered him up.

11 But the chief priests *stirred up* the multitude
that *he should rather release* Barabbas *unto them.*
12 And Pilate again answered and said unto them,

What then shall I do unto *him*
whom *ye call the King of the Jews.*
13 And they *cried out again*, Crucify him.
14 And *Pilate* said unto them,
Why, what evil hath he done?

But they cried out exceedingly,
Crucify him.

Matt. xxvii.

1 Now when morning was come,
all the chief priests and the elders of the people

took counsel *against Jesus to put him to death:*

2 and they bound him, and *led* him away,
and delivered him up to Pilate *the governor.*

11 *Now Jesus stood before the governor:*
and *the governor* asked him, saying,
Art thou the King of the Jews?
And Jesus said unto him,
Thou sayest.
12 And when he was accused by the chief priests
and elders, he answered nothing.
13 Then saith Pilate unto him,

Hearest thou not how many things they *witness* against the
14 And he gave him no answer, *not even to one word:*
insomuch that *the governor* marvelled *greatly.*

15 Now at the feast
the governor was wont to release unto *the multitude* a
prisoner,
whom they *would.*
16 And *they had then a notable prisoner*, called Barabbas.

17 *When therefore they were gathered together,*

Pilate said unto them,
Whom will ye that I release unto you?
Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?
18 For he *knew* that for envy they had delivered him up.
19 *And while he was sitting on the judgement-seat, his wife*
unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that righte
man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dr
because of him.
20 Now the chief priests *and the elders persuaded* the multitu
that *they should ask for* Barabbas, *and destroy Jesus.*
21 But *the governor* answered and said unto them,
Whether of the twain will ye that I release *unto you?*
22 *And they said, Barabbas. Pilate saith unto them,*
What then shall I do unto *Jesus*
which *is called Christ?*
They *all* say, *Let* him *be* crucified.
23 And he said,
Why, what evil hath he done?

But they cried out exceedingly, saying,
Let him *be* crucified.
24 *So when Pilate saw that he prevailed nothing, but rather*
a tumult was arising, he took water, and washed his h

FORE PILATE.

Luke xxii, xxiii.

And *as soon as it was day*,
the *assembly* of the elders of the people was gathered together,
both chief priests and scribes;
and they led him away into their council, saying, | *If thou art the Christ, tell us. But he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe:* | *and if I ask you, ye will not answer.*|
But from henceforth shall the Son of man be seated at the right hand of the power of God. | *And they all said, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am.* | *And they said, What further need have we of witness? for we ourselves have heard from his own mouth.*
xiii. [1] *And the whole company of them rose up,*
and *brought* him *before* Pilate.
And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this man perverting our nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, and saying that he himself is Christ a king.

And Pilate asked him, saying,
Art thou the King of the Jews?
And he answered him and said,
Thou sayest.

But they cried out all together, saying, Away with this man,
and release *unto us* Barabbas:
one who for *a certain* insurrection made *in the city,*
and for murder, *was cast into prison.*

[25a] And he released *him*
that for insurrection and murder
had been cast into prison, . . .

And Pilate spake unto them again,
desiring to release *Jesus;*

But they *shouted,* saying, Crucify, crucify him.
And he said unto them *the third time,*
Why, what evil hath *this man* done?
I have found no cause of death in him:
I will therefore chastise him and release him.
But they *were instant with loud voices,*
asking that he might be crucified.
And their voices prevailed.
And Pilate gave sentence,

§ 82. THE TRIAL

Mark xv.

15 *And Pilate, wishing to content the multitude,*
released unto them Barabbas,

and delivered Jesus,
when he had scourged him,
to be crucified.

Matt. xxvii.

before the multitude, saying, I am innocent[3] *of the blood of*
25 *this righteous man: see ye to it.* | *And all the people answered*
and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

26 Then released he unto them Barabbas:

but Jesus he scourged }
and delivered }
to be crucified.

§ 83. THE

Mark xv.

A.
16 And the soldiers *led* him *away*
within the court, which is the[1] *Praetorium;*
and they *call together* the whole band.
17 And they *clothe* him with *purple,*
and plaiting a crown of thorns, they put it on him:

18 and they *began to salute* him,
Hail, King of the Jews!
19 And they smote his head with *a* reed,
and did spit upon him,
and *bowing their knees worshipped* him.

B.
20 And when they had mocked him,
they took off from him the *purple,*
and put on him his garments.

And they lead him *out* to crucify him.
21 And they compel one *passing by,*
Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country,
the father of Alexander and Rufus,
to go with them, that he might bear his cross.

C.
22 And they *bring him* unto the place Golgotha,
which is, *being interpreted,*
The place of a skull.
23 And they *offered* him 'wine mingled with *myrrh:*'[a]
but he *received it not.*
24 And they crucify him,

and 'part his garments among them
casting lots *upon*'[b] *them,*
what each should take.
25 *And it was the third hour,*
and they crucified him.
26 And the superscription of his accusation
was written over,
The King of the Jews.
27 And with him they crucify two robbers;
one on his right hand, and one on his left.[2]

D.
29 And they that passed by railed on him,
'wagging their heads,'[c] and saying,
Ha! thou that destroyest the temple,
and buildest it in three days,
30 save thyself,
and come down from the cross.
31 In like manner also the chief priests
mocking him *among themselves*

Matt. xxvii.

27 Then the soldiers *of the governor took* Jesus
into the palace,
and *gathered unto him* the whole band.
28 And they *stripped*[4] *him,* and *put on* him a *scarlet robe.*
29a And they plaited a crown of thorns and put it upon his *head,*
and a reed in his right hand;
29c and *mocked* him, saying,
Hail, King of the Jews!
30b and took *the* reed and smote him on the head.
30a And they spat upon him,
29b and they *kneeled down before* him,

31 And when they had mocked him,
they took off from him the *robe,*
and put on him his garments.

and led him away to crucify him.
32 And *as they came out,* they *found*
a man of Cyrene, Simon *by name:*
him they compelled
to go with them, that he might bear his cross.

33 And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha,
that is to say,
The place of a skull,
34 they *gave* him 'wine' *to drink* 'mingled with *gall*'[a]
and *when he had tasted it* he *would not drink.*
35 And *when* they had crucified him,

they 'parted his garments among them,
casting lots':[b]
36 *and they sat and watched him there.*

37 And *they set up* over his *head*
his accusation written,
This is *Jesus* the King of the Jews.
38 *Then* are there crucified with him two robbers,
one on the right hand, and one on the left.

39 And they that passed by railed on him,
40 'wagging their heads,'[c] and saying,
Thou that destroyest the temple,
and buildest it in three days,
save thyself: *if thou art the Son of God,*
come down from the cross.
41 In like manner also the chief priests
mocking him,

[a] Ps. lxix. 22. [b] Ps. xxii. 19. [c] Ps. xxii. 7. [d] Ps. xxii. 7.

BEFORE PILATE (*continued*).

Luke xxiii.

that what they asked for should be done.
[27] And he released *him that for insurrection and murder*
had been cast into prison, whom they asked for;
but Jesus he delivered up *to their will.*

CRUCIFIXION.

Luke xxiii.

[26] And when they led him away,
they *laid hold upon*
one Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country,

and *laid on him* the cross, to bear it *after Jesus.*

[33] And when they came unto the place which is called

The skull,

there they crucified him,
and the malefactors, one on the right hand and the other on
[34] *the left.* | [5] *And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they*
know not what they do.
And 'parting his garments among them,
they cast lots.' [b]

[38] And there was also a superscription over him,

This is the King of the Jews.
[32] . . . and the *malefactors,*
one on the right hand and the other on the left.]

[35] And *the people stood 'beholding'.* [c]

And the *rulers* also
'scoffed at him', [d]

M. *or* palace. [2] M. *add* [28] And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was reckoned with transgressors. *See Luke xxii. 37.*
[3] M. of this blood: see ye, &c. [4] M. clothed. [5] M. *omit* And Jesus said . . . what they do.

Mark xv.	Matt. xxvii.
with the scribes, said, He saved others ; himself he cannot save. 32 Let the Christ, the King of Israel, now come down from the cross, that we may *see* and believe.	with the scribes *and elders*, said, 42 He saved others ; himself he cannot save. He is the King of Israel ; let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on him. 43 *He trusteth on God ; let him deliver him now,* *if he desireth him :* *for he said, I am the Son of God.*
And they that were crucified with him reproached him.	44 And *the robbers* also that were crucified with him *cast* upon him *the same* reproach.
E.	
33 And *when* the sixth hour *was come*, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour. 34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani ? which is, *being interpreted*, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ?' [a] 35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, *Behold*, he calleth Elijah. 36 And one ran, and filling a sponge full of vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let be ; let us see whether Elijah cometh to *take* him *down*. 37 And Jesus *uttered* a loud voice,	45 Now *from* the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land until the ninth hour. 46 And *about* the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, *saying*, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani ? that is, 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ?' [a] 47 And some of them that stood there, when they heard it, said, *This man* calleth Elijah. 48 And *straightway* one of them ran, and *took* a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. 49 *And the rest* said, Let be ; let us see whether Elijah cometh to *save* him.[3] 50 And Jesus cried *again* with a loud voice,
and gave up the ghost.	and *yielded* up *his spirit*.
F.	
38 And the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom.	51 And *behold*, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom ; 52 *and the earth did quake ; and the rocks were rent ;	and th* *tombs were opened ; and many bodies of the saints that ha* 53 *fallen asleep were raised ;	and coming forth out of th* *tombs after his resurrection they entered into the holy cit* *and appeared unto many.*
G.	
39 And when the centurion, *which stood by over against him*, saw *that he so* [1] *gave up the ghost*, he said, Truly this man was [2] the Son of God.	54 Now the centurion, *and they that were with him watching Jesus*, when they saw *the earthquake*, and the things that were done *feared exceedingly*, saying, Truly this was [2] the Son of God.
H.	
40 And there were *also* women beholding from afar : among whom were both Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James *the less* and of Joses, and *Salome ;* 41 who, *when he was in* Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him ; *and many other women* *which came up with him unto Jerusalem.*	55a And *many* women were there beholding from afar, 56 among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and *the mother of the sons of Zebedee.* 55b which had followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him :

[a] Ps. xxii. 1. [b] Ps. xxxi. 6. [c] Ps. xxxviii. 11, lxxxviii. 8.

RUCIFIXION (*continued*).

Luke xxiii.

saying,
He saved others; *let him* sāve himself,
if this is the Christ *of God, his chosen.*

39 And *one of the malefactors* which were *hanged*
railed on him,
40 *saying, Art not thou the Christ? save thyself and us.* | *But*
the other answered, and rebuking him said, Dost thou not
even fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? |
41 *And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our*
42 *deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.* | *And he said,*
43 *Jesus, remember me when thou comest* [4] *in thy kingdom.* | *And*
he said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou
be with me in Paradise.
44 And *it was now about* the sixth hour,
and a darkness *came* over the whole land
45a until the ninth hour, *the sun's light failing:*

36 *And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him,*
offering him vinegar,
and saying,
37 *If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself.*

46 And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, *he said,*
Father, '*into thy hands I commend my spirit:*' [b]
and having said this, he gave up the ghost.

45b and the veil of the temple was rent *in the midst.*

47 And when the centurion

saw what was done,
he *glorified God,* saying,
Certainly this was *a righteous man.*
48 *And all the multitudes that came together to this sight, when*
they beheld the things that were done, returned smiting their
breasts.

49a And *all* '*his acquaintance,*' and the women
49c '*stood* afar off,' [c] beholding these things.

49b that followed *with* him from Galilee,

[1] M. add cried out, and. [2] M. *or* a son of God.
[3] M. *add* And another took a spear and pierced his side, and there came out water and blood. *See John xix. 34.* [4] M. into.

§ 84. TH

Mark xv.

42 And when even was *now* come,
because it was the Preparation,
that is, the day before the sabbath,
43 there came Joseph of Arimathaea,
a councillor *of honourable estate*,

who also himself was looking for the kingdom of God;
and he *boldly* went *in* unto Pilate,
and asked for the body of Jesus.
44 *And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead:*
and calling unto him the centurion,
he asked him whether he [1] *had been any while dead.*
45 *And when he learned it of the centurion,*
he granted the corpse to Joseph.

46 *And he bought a linen cloth,*
and taking him down,
wound him in the linen cloth,
and laid him in a tomb
which had been hewn out of *a* rock;
and he rolled a stone *against* the door of the tomb.

47 And Mary Magdalene
and Mary the *mother of Joses*
beheld *where* he was laid.

Matt. xxvii.

57 And when even was come,

there came a *rich* man from Arimathaea, named Joseph,

who also himself was *Jesus' disciple:*
58 this man went to Pilate,
and asked for the body of Jesus.

Then Pilate commanded it to be given up.

59 And *Joseph* took the body,
and wrapped it in a *clean* linen cloth,
60 and laid it in *his own new* tomb,
which *he* had hewn out in *the* rock:
and he rolled a *great* stone *to* the door of the tomb,
and departed.
61 And Mary Magdalene *was there,*
and *the other* Mary,
sitting over against the sepulchre.

§ 85. TH

Mark xvi.

1 And when the sabbath *was past,*
Mary Magdalene,
and Mary the mother of James,
and *Salome*, bought spices,
that they might come and anoint him.
2 And *very* early on the first day of the week,
they come to the tomb
when the sun was risen.
3 *And they were saying among themselves,*
Who shall roll us away the stone
from the door of the tomb?
4 *And looking up,*
they see that the stone is rolled *back:*
for it was exceeding great.
5 And entering into *the tomb,*

they saw a young man sitting on the right side,
arrayed in *a white robe;*
and they were *amazed.*

6 And *he* saith unto them, *Be not amazed:*
ye seek Jesus, *the Nazarene,*
which hath been crucified:
he is risen; he is not here:
behold, the place where *they laid him!*
7 But go, tell his disciples *and Peter,*

He goeth before you into Galilee:
there shall ye see him, *as he said unto you.*
8 And they *went out,* and *fled* from the tomb;

Matt. xxviii.

1a Now *late* on the sabbath day,
1c *came* Mary Magdalene
and *the other* Mary

to see the sepulchre.
1b *as it began* to dawn *toward* the first day of the week,
2 *And behold, there was a great earthquake; for an angel*
the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled awa
the stone, and sat upon it.

3 *His appearance was as lightning, and his raiment white*
4 *snow:* | *and for fear of him the watchers did quake, an*
became as dead men.

5 And *the angel answered* and said unto *the women, Fear not y*
for *I know that* ye seek Jesus,
which hath been crucified.
6 He is not here; for he is risen, *even as he said.*
Come, see the place where [2] *the Lord lay.*
7 And go *quickly,* and tell his disciples,
He is risen from the dead;
and lo, he goeth before you into Galilee;
there shall ye see him: *lo, I have told you.*
8 And they *departed quickly* from the tomb

URIAL.

Luke xxiii.

[54] And it was *the day of* the Preparation,
and the sabbath *drew on.*
[50] And behold, a man named Joseph,
who was a councillor, *a good man and a righteous*
[51] *(he had not consented to their counsel and deed),*
a man of Arimathaea, *a city of the Jews,*
who was looking for the kingdom of God:
[52] this man went to Pilate,
and asked for the body of Jesus.

[53] And he took it down,
and wrapped it in a linen cloth,
and laid him in a tomb that was *hewn in stone,*
where never man had yet lain.

[55] And *the women, which had come with him out of Galilee,*
followed after,
and beheld *the tomb, and how* his body was laid.
And they returned,
and prepared spices and ointments.
And on the sabbath they rested according to the commandment.

ESURRECTION.

Luke xxiv.

[10a] [Now they were Mary Magdalene,
and *Joanna,*
and Mary the mother of James:]

bringing the spices *which they had prepared.*

[1] But on the first day of the week, *at early dawn,*
they came unto the tomb,

[2] And they *found* the stone rolled *away from the tomb.*

[3] And they entered in,
and found not the body [3] *of the Lord Jesus.*
[4] *And it came to pass, while they were perplexed thereabout,*
behold, two men stood by them
in *dazzling apparel:*
and as they were *affrighted,*
and bowed down their faces to the earth,
they said unto them,
Why seek ye *the living among the dead?*

[6] He is not here, but is risen:
remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,
saying that the Son of man must be delivered up into the
hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise
again.

[8] And they *remembered his words,* and *returned* [5] from the tomb,

. were already dead. [2] M. he lay. [3] M. *omit* of the Lord Jesus. [4] M. *omit* He is not here, but is risen. [5] M. *omit* from the tomb.

Mark xvi.

for trembling and astonishment had come upon them:
and *they said nothing to any one;*
for they were afraid.

Matt. xxviii.

with fear and great joy,
and *ran to bring his disciples word.*
9 *And behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they*
10 *came and took hold of his feet, and worshipped him. | Then*
saith Jesus unto them, Fear not: go tell my brethren that
they depart into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

§ 85. THE

§ 86. CONCLUSION

[**Mark xvi.**[1]

9 *Now when he was risen early on the first day of the week, he*
appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast
10 *out seven devils. | She went and told them that had been with*
11 *him, as they mourned and wept. | And they, when they heard*
that he was alive, and had been seen of her, disbelieved.
12 *And after these things he was manifested in another form*
unto two of them, as they walked, on their way into the
13 *country. | And they went away and told it unto the rest:*
neither believed they them.
14 *And afterward he was manifested unto the eleven themselves*
as they sat at meat; and he upbraided them with their
unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not
15 *them which had seen him after he was risen. | And he said*
unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to
16 *the whole creation. | He that believeth and is baptized shall*
17 *be saved; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned. | And*
these signs shall follow them that believe: in my name shall
they cast out devils; they shall speak with [2] *new tongues; |*
18 *they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly*
thing, it shall in no wise hurt them; they shall lay hands on
the sick, and they shall recover.
19 *So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken unto them,*
was received up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand
20 *of God. | And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the*
Lord working with them, and confirming the word by the
signs that followed. Amen.]

RESURRECTION *(continued).*

Luke xxiv.

and *told all these things to the eleven, and to all the rest.*
10 *Now they were Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary*
the mother of James: and the other women with them told
these things unto the apostles.
11 *And these words appeared in their sight as idle talk; and*
12 *they disbelieved them.* | [3] *But Peter arose, and ran unto the*
tomb; and stooping and looking in, he seeth the linen cloths
by themselves; and he departed to his home, wondering at
that which was come to pass.

[1] M. *omit from verse 9 to the end.* [2] M. *omit* new. [3] M. *omit verse 12.*

PART II

ST. MATTHEW

(OMITTING PASSAGES ALREADY PRINTED IN PART I)

§ 87. GENEALOGY.

Matt. i.

[1] [The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham. v. § 1.]
[2] *Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob*
[3] *begat Judah and his brethren; | and Judah begat Perez and Zerah of Tamar; and Perez begat Hezron; and Hezron*
[4] *begat Ram; | and Ram begat Amminadab; and Amminadab*
[5] *begat Nahshon; and Nahshon begat Salmon; | and Salmon*
[6] *begat Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth; | and Obed begat Jesse; and Jesse begat David the king.*
And David begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of
[7] *Uriah; | and Solomon begat Rehoboam; and Rehoboam begat*
[8] *Abijah; and Abijah begat Asa; | and Asa begat Jehoshaphat; and Jehoshaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat*
[9] *Uzziah; | and Uzziah begat Jotham; and Jotham begat Ahaz;*
[10] *and Ahaz begat Hezekiah; | and Hezekiah begat Manasseh;*
[11] *and Manasseh begat Amon; and Amon begat Josiah; | and Josiah begat Jechoniah and his brethren, at the time of the carrying away to Babylon.*
[12] *And after the carrying away to Babylon, Jechoniah begat*
[13] *Shealtiel; and Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel; | and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat*
[14] *Azor; | and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and*
[15] *Achim begat Eliud; | and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar*
[16] *begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; | and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.*
[17] *So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations.*

[Cf. Luke iii.
[23] And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age, being the son (as was supposed) of
[24] Joseph, the son of Heli, | the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph,
[25] the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum
[26] the son of Esli, the son of Naggai, | the son of Maath the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of
[27] Josech, the son of Joda, | the son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the
[28] son of Neri, | the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of
[29] Cosam, the son of Elmadam, the son of Er, | the son of Jesus, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of
[30] Matthat, the son of Levi, | the son of Symeon, the son of Judas, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonam, the son of
[31] Eliakim, | the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of
[32] Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David, | the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz, the son of
[33] Salmon, the son of Nahshon, | the son of Amminadab the son of Arni, the son of Hezron, the son of Perez, the son
[34] of Judah, | the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of
[35] Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor, | the son of Serug, the son of Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber
[36] the son of Shelah, | the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad
[37] the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, | the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the
[38] son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan, | the son of Enos the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God.]

§ 88. THE NATIVITY.

Matt. i.

[18] *Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. |*
[19] *And Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her*
[20] *away privily. | But when he thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy*
[21] *Ghost. | And she shall bring forth a son; and thou shalt call his name Jesus; for it is he that shall save his people*
[22] *from their sins. | Now all this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,*
[23] *Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son,*
And they shall call his name Immanuel;
[24] *which is, being interpreted, God with us, | And Joseph*

§ 88. THE NATIVITY (*continued*).

Matt. i.

arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord com-
5 *manded him, and took unto him his wife; | and knew her*
not till she had brought forth a son: and he called his name
Jesus.

§ 89. THE WISE MEN.

Matt. ii.

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judæa in the
days of Herod the king, behold, wise men from the east came
2 *to Jerusalem, saying, | Where is he that is born King of*
the Jews? for we saw his star in the east, and are come to
3 *worship him. | And when Herod the king heard it, he was*
4 *troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. | And gathering*
together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he
5 *inquired of them where the Christ should be born. | And they*
said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judæa: for thus it is written
by the prophet,
6 *And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah,*
Art in no wise least among the princes of Judah:
For out of thee shall come forth a governor,
Which shall be shepherd of my people Israel.
7 *Then Herod privily called the wise men, and learned of them*
8 *carefully what time the star appeared. | And he sent them to*
Bethlehem, and said, Go and search out carefully concerning
the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me
9 *word, that I also may come and worship him. | And they,*
having heard the king, went their way; and lo, the star,
10 *which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and*
11 *stood over where the young child was. | And when they saw*
the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. | And they
came into the house and saw the young child with Mary his
mother; and they fell down and worshipped him; and
opening their treasures they offered unto him gifts, gold and
12 *frankincense and myrrh. | And being warned of God in a*
dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed
into their own country another way.

§ 90. THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT, AND MURDER OF THE CHILDREN.

Matt. ii.

13 *Now when they were departed, behold, an angel of the Lord*
appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise and take the
young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou
there until I tell thee: for Herod will seek the young child
14 *to destroy him. | And he arose and took the young child and*
15 *his mother by night, and departed into Egypt; | and was*
there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled
which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,
Out of Egypt did I call my son. | Then Herod, when he saw
that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth,
and sent forth, and slew all the male children that were in
Bethlehem, and in all the borders thereof, from two years
old and under, according to the time which he had carefully
learned of the wise men. | Then was fulfilled that which was
spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying,
A voice was heard in Ramah,
Weeping and great mourning,
Rachel weeping for her children;
And she would not be comforted, because they are not.
19 *But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord*
appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, | saying, Arise
and take the young child and his mother, and go into the
land of Israel: for they are dead that sought the young
child's life. | And he arose and took the young child and his

§ 90. THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT, AND MURDER OF THE CHILDREN (*continued*).

Matt. ii.

22 *mother, and came into the land of Israel. | But when he heard*
that Archelaus was reigning over Judaea in the room of his
father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; and being warned
of God in a dream, he withdrew into the parts of Galilee,|
23 *and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might*
be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, that he should
be called a Nazarene.

[The Preaching of John the Baptist. v. § 7.]

[The Temptation. v. § 5.]

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT.

Matt. v. | **Luke vi.**

A.

1 And *seeing the multitudes,*
he *went up into the mountain:*

17 and he *came down with them, and stood on a level place,*
and a great multitude of his disciples, and a great numb
of the people from all Judaea and Jerusalem, and the s
coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to
18 *healed of their diseases; | and they that were troubled wi*
19 *unclean spirits were healed. | And all the multitude soug*
to touch him: for power came forth from him, and heal
them all.

and when he had sat down,
his disciples *came unto him:*
2 and he *opened his mouth and taught them*, saying,

20 And he *lifted up his eyes on* his disciples, and said,

B.

3 Blessed are *the* poor *in spirit:*
for *theirs* is the kingdom of *heaven.*
4 Blessed are '*they* that *mourn*':
for *they* 'shall *be comforted*'.[a]
5 *Blessed are 'the meek':*
for they 'shall inherit the earth'.[b] [1]
6 Blessed are *they* that hunger *and thirst after righteousness:*
for *they* shall be filled.
7 *Blessed are the merciful:*
for they shall obtain mercy.
8 *Blessed are 'the pure in heart':*[c]
for they shall see God.
9 *Blessed are the peace-makers:*
for they shall be called sons of God.
10 *Blessed are they that have been persecuted for righteousness' sake:*
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
11 Blessed are ye when men shall reproach you,
and *persecute* you,

and *say all manner of* evil *against you falsely,*
for *my* sake.
12 Rejoice, and *be exceeding glad:*
for great is your reward in heaven:
for *so persecuted they* the prophets *which were before you.*
13 [Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and trodden under foot of men. v. § 55.]

Blessed are *ye* poor:
for *yours* is the kingdom of *God.*
21b Blessed are *ye* that *weep now:*
for *ye* shall *laugh.*

21a Blessed are *ye* that hunger *now:*
for *ye* shall be filled.

22 Blessed are ye, when men shall *hate* you,
and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and
reproach you,
and *cast out your name as* evil,
for *the Son of man's* sake.
23 Rejoice *in that day*, and *leap for joy:*
for *behold*, your reward is great in heaven:
for *in the same manner did their fathers unto* the prophe

C.

14 *Ye are the light of the world.*
A city set on a hill cannot be hid.
15 [Neither do men light a lamp,
and put it under the bushel,
but on the stand;
and it shineth unto all that are in the house. v. § 26].

[a] Isa. lxi. 2. [b] Ps. xxxvii. 11. [c] Ps. xxiv. 4.

[1] M. *transpose verses 4 and 5.*

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. v.

Even so let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets: I came not to destroy, but to fulfil. | *For verily I say unto you,*
Till heaven and earth pass away,
one jot or one tittle shall *in no wise pass away* from the law,
till all things be accomplished.
Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. | *For I say unto you, that except your righteousness exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.*

Ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, 'Thou shalt not kill'[a]*; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgement:* | *but I say unto you, that every one who is angry with his brother*[1] *shall be in danger of the judgement; and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council; and whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of the hell of fire.* | *If therefore thou art offering thy gift at the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee,* | *leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.*

Agree with thine adversary *quickly*,
whiles thou art with him in the way;
lest haply *the adversary deliver* thee to the judge,
and the judge deliver thee to the officer,
and thou *be* cast into prison.
Verily I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence,
till thou have paid the last *farthing*.

Ye have heard that it was said, 'Thou shalt not commit adultery:'[b] | *but I say unto you, that every one that looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.*
[29-30 v. § 54.] [31-32 v. § 56.]
Again, ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, 'Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths:'[c] | *but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by 'the heaven', for 'it is the throne of God'*; | *nor by 'the earth', for 'it is the footstool of his feet'*;[d] *nor by Jerusalem, for it is 'the city of the great King'.*[e] | *Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white or black.* | *But let your speech be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; and whatsoever is more than these is of the evil one.*

Ye have heard that it was said, 'An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth':[f] | *but I say unto you, Resist not*[2] *him that is evil:*
but whosoever smiteth thee on thy *right* cheek,
turn to him the other also.
And if any man would *go to law with thee*,
and take away thy coat,
let him have thy cloke also.
And whosoever shall compel thee to go one mile,

Luke xvi.

17 *But it is easier*
for heaven and earth *to* pass away,
than for one tittle of the law to *fall*.

Luke xii.

57 *And why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?*
58 For as thou art *going* with thine adversary *before the magistrate*,
on the way *give diligence to be quit* of him;
lest haply *he hale* thee unto the judge,
and the judge shall deliver thee unto the officer,
and *the officer shall* cast thee into prison.
59 I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence,
till thou have paid the *very* last *mite*.

Luke vi.

29 To him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek
offer also the other;
and from him
that taketh away thy cloke
withhold not thy coat also.

[a] Exod. xx. 13; Deut. v. 18. [b] Exod. xx. 14; Deut. v. 17. [c] Num. xxx. 3. [d] Isa. lxvi. 1.
[e] Ps. xlviii. 3. [f] Exod. xxi. 23; Lev. xxiv. 20; Deut. xix. 21.
[1] M. *add* without cause. [2] M. *or* evil.

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. v.

go with him twain.
42 Give to him that asketh thee,
and from him that *would borrow of thee*
turn not thou away.

I.

43 *Ye have heard that it was said, 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour,'* [a] *and hate thine enemy:*
44 but I say unto you,
Love your enemies

and pray for them that *persecute* you;
45 that ye may be sons of *your Father which is in heaven:*
for he *maketh his sun to rise on* the evil and *the good,*
and sendeth rain on the just and the unjust.
46 For if ye love them that love you,
what *reward* have ye?
do not even the *publicans the same?*
47 And if ye *salute*
your brethren only,
what *do* ye *more than others?*
do not even the *Gentiles* the same?

48 'Ye' *therefore* 'shall be *perfect*', [b]
as your *heavenly* Father is *perfect.*

J. **Matt. vi.**

1 *Take heed that ye do not your righteousness before men, to*
be seen of them: else ye have no reward with your Father
2 *which is in heaven.*
When therefore thou doest alms, sound not a trumpet before
thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets,
that they may have glory of men. '*Verily I say unto you,*
3 *They have received their reward.*' [d] | *But when thou doest alms,*
let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:
4 *that thine alms may be in secret: 'and thy Father which*
seeth in secret shall recompense thee.' [e]

K.

5 *And when ye pray, ye shall not be as the hypocrites: for they*
love to stand and pray in the synagogues and in the corners
of the streets, that they may be seen of men. '*Verily I say unto*
6 *you, They have received their reward.*' [f] | *But thou, when*
thou prayest, 'enter into thine inner chamber, and having
shut thy door, pray' [g] *to thy Father which is in secret, 'and*
thy Father which seeth in secret shall recompense thee.' [h]
7 *And in praying use not vain repetitions, as the Gentiles do:*
for they think that they shall be heard for their much
8 *speaking.* | *Be not therefore like unto them: for your Father*
knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.
9 *After this manner therefore* pray ye:
Our Father *which art in heaven,*
10 Hallowed be thy name.
Thy kingdom come.
Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.
11 Give us *this day* our daily bread.
12 And forgive us our *debts,*
as we also *have* forgiven our debtors.
13 And bring us not into temptation,
but deliver us from [1] *the evil one.*[2]

Luke vi.

30 Give to *every one* that asketh thee;
and of him that *taketh away thy goods*
ask them not again.

27 But I say unto you *which hear,*
Love your enemies,
do good to them that hate you,
28 *bless them that curse you,*
pray for them that *despitefully use* you . . .
35b . . . and ye shall be sons of *the Most High:*
for he *is kind toward the unthankful* and evil.

32 And if ye love them that love you,
what *thank* have ye?
for even *sinners love those that love them.*
33b And if ye *do good to them*
that do good to you,
what *thank have* ye?
for even *sinners* do the same.
34 *And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, wh*
thank have ye? even sinners lend to sinners, to receive aga
35a *as much.* | *But love your enemies, and do them good, a*
lend, never despairing [3]*; and your reward shall be great,*
36 Be ye *merciful,*
even as your Father 'is *merciful*'. [c]

Luke xi.

1 *And it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain plac*
that when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lor
2 *teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciple*
And ye said unto them,
When ye pray, *say,*
4 Father,
Hallowed be thy name.
Thy kingdom come.[5]

3 Give us *day by day* our daily bread.
4 And forgive us our *sins,*
for we *ourselves* also forgive *every one that is* indebted to u
And bring us not into temptation.[6]

[a] Lev. xix. 18. [b] Deut. xviii. 13. [c] Ps. ciii. 8. [d] Cf. vi. 5, 16. [e] Cf. vi. 6, 18. [f] Cf. vi. 2, 16. [g] Isa. xxvi. 20. [h] Cf. vi. 4, 1
[1] M. *or* evil. [2] M. *add* For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.
[3] M. despairing of no man. [4] M. Our Father, which art in heaven. [5] M. *add* Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth
[6] M. *add* but deliver us from the evil one (*or* the evil).

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. vi.

14 [For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly
15 Father will also forgive you. | But if ye forgive not
men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive
your trespasses. v. § 63.]

Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad
countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may be
seen of men to fast. 'Verily I say unto you, They have
received their reward.' [a] | *But thou, when thou fastest, anoint*
thy head, and wash thy face; | *that thou be not seen of men to*
fast, but of thy Father which is in secret: 'and thy Father
which seeth in secret, shall recompense thee.' [b]

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where
moth and rust doth consume, and where thieves break through
and steal:
but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven.
where neither moth *nor rust doth consume,*
and where thieves do not *break through nor steal:*
for where *thy* treasure is,
there will *thy* heart be also.

The lamp of *the* body is *the* eye:
if therefore thine eye be single,
thy whole body *shall be* full of light.
But *if thine eye be* evil,
thy *whole* body *shall be* full of darkness.
If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, *how great*
is the darkness!

No *man* can serve two masters:
for either he will hate the one, and love the other;
or else he will hold to one and despise the other.
Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

Therefore I say unto you,
Be not anxious for your life,
what ye shall eat, *or what ye shall drink;*
nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.
Is not the life more than the food,
and the body than the raiment?
Behold the birds of the heaven,
that they sow not, neither do they reap,
nor *gather into* barns;
and *your heavenly Father* feedeth them.
Are not ye of much more value than *they?*
And which of you by being anxious can
add *one* cubit unto his [1] stature?

and why are ye anxious concerning *raiment?*
Consider the lilies *of the field,* how they grow;
they toil not, neither do they spin:
yet I say unto you that
even Solomon in all his glory
was not arrayed like one of these.
But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field,

Luke xi.

Luke xii.

Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to
give you the kingdom. | *Sell that ye have, and give alms; make*
for yourselves *purses which wax not old,*
a treasure in the heavens *that faileth not,*
where no thief *draweth near,*
neither moth *destroyeth.*
For where *your* treasure is,
there will *your* heart be also.

Luke xi.

The lamp of *thy* body is *thine* eye:
when thine eye is single,
thy whole body *also is* full of light;
but *when it is* evil,
thy body *also is* full of darkness.
Look therefore whether the light that is in thee be *not*
darkness.
If therefore thy whole body be full of light, having no part
dark, it shall be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with
its bright shining doth give thee light.

Luke xvi.

No *servant* can serve two masters:
for either he will hate the one and love the other:
or else he will hold to one, and despise the other.
Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

Luke xii.

And he said unto his disciples,
Therefore I say unto you,
Be not anxious for your life,
what ye shall eat;
nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.
For the life *is* more than the food,
and the body than the raiment.
Consider the ravens,
that they sow not, neither reap;
which have no store-chamber nor barn;
and *God* feedeth them:
of *how* much more value are ye than *the birds!*
And which of you by being anxious can
add *a* cubit unto his [1] stature?
If then ye are not able to do even that which is least,
why are ye anxious concerning *the rest?*
Consider the lilies, how they grow:
they toil not, neither do they spin;
yet I say unto you,
Even Solomon in all his glory
was not arrayed like one of these.
But if God doth so clothe the grass in the field,

[a] Cf. vi. 2, 5. [b] Cf. vi. 4, 6.
[1] M. *or* age.

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. vi.

which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven,
shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith ?
31 *Be not therefore anxious*, saying,
What shall *we* eat ? or, What shall *we* drink ?
or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed ?
32 For after all these things do the Gentiles seek ;
for your *heavenly* Father knoweth
that ye have need of *all* these things.
33 But seek ye *first* his kingdom, *and his righteousness ;*
and *all* these things shall be added unto you.
34 *Be not therefore anxious for the morrow : for the morrow will be anxious for itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.*

Matt. vii.

Q.
1 Judge not, *that* ye be not judged.

2 *For with what judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged :*
[and with what measure ye mete,
it shall be measured unto you. v. § 26.]
3 And why beholdest thou the mote
that is in thy brother's eye,
but considerest not the beam
that is in thine own eye ?
4 Or how *wilt* thou say to thy brother,
Let me cast out the mote
out of thine eye ;
and lo, the beam
is in thine own eye ?
5 Thou hypocrite,
cast out first the beam out of thine own eye ;
and then shalt thou see clearly
to cast out the mote
out of thy brother's eye.

R.
6 *Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before the swine, lest haply they trample them under their feet, and turn and rend you.*

S.
7 Ask, and it shall be given you ;
seek, and ye shall find ;
knock, and it shall be opened unto you :
8 for every one that asketh receiveth ;
and he that seeketh findeth ;
and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
9 Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him
for a loaf, will give him a stone ;
10 or if he ask for a fish, will he give him a serpent ?

11 If ye then, being evil,
know how to give good gifts unto your children,
how much more shall your Father *which is in heaven*
give *good things* to them that ask him ?

T.
12 *All things therefore whatsoever* ye would
that men should do unto you,
even so do ye also unto them :

for this is the law and the prophets.

Luke xii.

which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven ;
how much more shall he clothe you, O ye of little faith
29 *And seek not ye*
what *ye* shall eat, and what *ye* shall drink,
neither be ye of doubtful mind.
30 For all these things do the *nations of the world* seek after
but your Father knoweth
that ye have need of these things.
31 Howbeit seek ye [1] his kingdom,
and these things shall be added unto you. . . .

Luke vi.

37 And judge not, *and* ye *shall* not be judged :
and condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned : releas
38 *and ye shall be released : | give, and it shall be given unto you good measure, pressed down, shaken together, running ove shall they give into your bosom.*

[For with what measure ye mete
it shall be measured to you *again.*]
41 And why beholdest thou the mote
that is in thy brother's eye,
but considerest not the beam
that is in thine own eye ?
42 Or how *canst* thou say to thy brother,
Brother, let me cast out the mote
that is in thine eye,
when thou beholdest not the beam
that is in thine own eye ?
Thou hypocrite,
cast out first the beam out of thine own eye,
and then shalt thou see clearly
to cast out the mote
that is in thy brother's eye.

Luke xi.

9 *And I say unto you*, Ask, and it shall be given you ;
seek, and ye shall find ;
knock, and it shall be opened unto you.
10 For every one that asketh receiveth ;
and he that seeketh findeth ;
and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
11 And of which of you *that is a father* shall his son ask
[2] a loaf, and he give him a stone ?
or a fish, and he *for a fish* give him a serpent ?
12 *Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion ?*
13 If ye then, being evil,
know how to give good gifts unto your children,
how much more shall your *heavenly* Father
give *the Holy Spirit* to them that ask him ?

Luke vi.

31 *And as* ye would
that men should do to you,
do ye also to them *likewise.*
[Cf. Matt. xxii.
40 On these two commandments hangeth the whole law, an
the prophets.]

[1] M. the kingdom of God.

[2] M. *omit* a loaf, and he gave him a stone ? or.

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. vii.

Enter ye in by the narrow *gate:*
for wide [1] *is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction,*
and many be they that enter in thereby.
For narrow is the gate, and straitened the way, that leadeth unto life, and few be they that find it.

Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves.

Matt. xii.

By their fruits *ye shall* know *them.*
Do men gather grapes of thorns,
or figs of *thistles*?
Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit;
but the corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.
A good tree cannot bring forth *evil* fruit,
neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

[33b] . . . for the tree is known by its fruit.

[33a] *Either make the tree good, and its fruit good;*
or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt: . . .

[34] *Ye offspring of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things?*
for out of the abundance of the heart *the* mouth speaketh.
[35] The good man out of his good treasure
bringeth forth good things:
and the evil man out of his evil treasure
bringeth forth evil things.

Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. | Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord,
shall enter into the kingdom of heaven;
but he that doeth
the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Many will say *to me in that day, Lord, Lord,*
did we *not* '*prophesy by thy name*', [a]
and by thy name cast out devils, and by thy name
do many mighty works?
And *then will I profess* unto them,
never knew you:
depart from me, ye that work iniquity.' [b]

Every one *therefore* which
heareth *these* words of mine,
and doeth them,

Luke xiii.

[22] *And he went on his way through cities and villages, teaching,*
[23] *and journeying on unto Jerusalem. | And one said unto him, Lord, are they few that be saved? And he said unto them,*
[24] *Strive to* enter in by the narrow *door:*
for many, *I say unto you, shall seek to* enter in, *and shall not be able.* . . .
[25] *When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and say to you, I know not whence ye are;* . . .

Luke vi.

[44] For *each* tree is know by its *own* fruit.

For of thorns men do not gather figs,
nor of a *bramble bush* gather they grapes.

[43] For there is no good tree that bringeth forth *corrupt* fruit;

nor again a corrupt tree that bringeth forth good fruit.

[45b] . . . for out of the abundance of the heart *his* mouth speaketh

[45a] The good man out of the good treasure *of his heart*

bringeth forth that which is good;
and the evil man out of the evil treasure

bringeth forth that which is evil: . . .

[46] *And why call ye* me, Lord, Lord,

and do *not*
the things which I say?

Luke xiii.

[26] . . . *then shall ye begin* to say,
We did *eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach in our streets;*

[27] And *he shall say, I tell you,*
I know not *whence ye are;*
'depart from me, *all* ye workers of iniquity.' [b]

Luke vi.

[47] Every one that *cometh unto me,*
and heareth my words,
and doeth them,
I will shew you to whom he is like:

[a] Jer. xxvii. 15, xiv. 14.
[b] Ps. vi. 8.
[1] M. *omit* is the gate.

§ 91. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT (*continued*).

Matt. vii.

shall be likened unto a *wise* man,
which built his house

upon the rock:
25 *and the rain descended*, and the floods *came*,
and the winds blew, and beat upon that house;
and it *fell not:*
for it was *founded upon the rock.*
26 And *every one that* heareth *these words of mine*,
and doeth them not,
shall be likened unto a *foolish* man,
which built his house upon the *sand:*
27 *and the rain descended, and the floods came,*
and the winds blew, and smote upon that house;
and it fell:
and great was the *fall* thereof.

Y

[28 And it came to pass, when Jesus ended these *words*,
29 *the multitudes were astonished at his teaching:* | *for he taught them as one having authority, and not as their scribes.* v. § 8.]

Luke vi.

48 he *is* like a man
building a house,
who digged and went deep,
and laid a foundation
upon the rock:
and when a flood *arose*,
the stream brake against that house
and *could not shake* it:
2 because it had been *well builded.*
49 But he that heareth,
and doeth not,
is like a man
that built a house upon the *earth*
without a foundation;
against which the stream brake,
and *straightway* it fell *in;*
and the *ruin* of that house was great.

Luke vii.

1 *After* he had ended *all* his *sayings in the ears of the peop*
he entered into Capernaum.

§ 92. THE CENTURION'S SERVANT.

Matt. viii.

5 And when he was entered into Capernaum,
there came unto him a centurion,
beseeching him, and saying,
6 *Lord, my* servant *lieth in the house*
sick *of the palsy, grievously tormented.*

7 *And he saith unto him,*
I will come and heal him.

8 And the centurion *answered* and said,
Lord, I am not worthy
that thou shouldest come under my roof:

but *only* say the word,
and my servant shall be healed.
9 For I also am a man [1] under authority,
having under myself soldiers:
and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth;
and to another, Come, and he cometh;
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.
10 And when Jesus heard *it*, he marvelled,
and said to them that followed,
Verily I say unto you,
I have not found so great faith,
no, not in Israel.
11 And *I say unto you*, that *many* shall come
'from the east and the west,' [a]
and shall sit down
with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,

Luke vii.

1 *After he had ended all his sayings in the ears of the peop*
he entered into Capernaum.
2 And a *certain* centurion's

servant, *who was dear unto him*,
was sick and *at the point of death.*
3 *And when he heard concerning Jesus, he sent unto him elde*
of the Jews, asking him that he would come and save h
4 *servant.* | *And they, when they came to Jesus, besought h*
earnestly, saying, He is worthy that thou shouldest do thi
5 *him:* | *for he loveth our nation, and himself built us o*
synagogue.

6 *And Jesus went with them.*
And when he was now not far from the house,
the centurion *sent friends* to him, saying unto him,
Lord, *trouble not thyself:* for I am not worthy
that thou shouldest come under my roof:
7 *wherefore neither thought I myself worthy*
to come unto thee:
but say the word,
and my servant shall be healed.
8 For I also am a man *set* under authority,
having under myself soldiers:
and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth;
and to another, Come, and he cometh;
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.
9 And when Jesus heard *these things*, he marvelled *at him*
and *turned* and said unto the *multitude* that followed hi
I say unto you,
I have not found so great faith,
no, not in Israel.
29 And they shall come
from the east and west, *and from the north and south,*
and shall sit down in the kingdom of *God.*
28b *when ye shall see* Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,

[a] Mal. i. 11; Isa. lix. 19.
[1] M. *add* set. [2] M. for it had been founded upon the rock.

§ 92. THE CENTURION'S SERVANT (*continued*).

Matt. viii.

in the kingdom of *heaven:*
but the *sons of the kingdom*
shall be cast forth *into the outer darkness:*
there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way;
as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee.
And the servant *was healed in that hour.*

Luke xiii.

and all the prophets, in the kingdom of *God,*
and *yourselves*
cast forth *without.*
28a There shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth,
30 *And behold, there are last which shall be first,*
and there are first which shall be last.

Luke vii.

10 And *they that were sent, returning to the house, found* the servant *whole.*

§ 93. INSTANCES OF DISCIPLESHIP.

Matt. viii.

Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him,
he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.
And *there came a scribe,* and said unto him,
Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.
And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes,
and the birds of the heaven have nests;
but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

And another *of the disciples* said unto him,
Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.
But Jesus saith unto him, Follow me;
and leave the dead to bury their own dead.

Luke ix.

57 And *as they went in the way a certain man* said unto him,
I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.
58 And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes,
and the birds of the heaven have nests;
but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said,
Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.
60 But he said unto him,
Leave the dead to bury their own dead;
but go thou and publish abroad the kingdom of God.

61 *And another also said, I will follow thee, Lord; but first suffer*
62 *me to bid farewell to them that are at my house. | But Jesus*
said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough,
and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

§ 94. TWO BLIND MEN.

Matt. ix.

And as Jesus passed by from thence, two blind men followed him, crying out, and saying, Have mercy on us, thou son of David. | And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. | Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it done unto you. | And their eyes were opened. And Jesus strictly charged them, saying, See that no man know it. | But they went forth, and spread abroad his fame in all that land.

[Cf. Matt. xx. 29–34 (§ 61).]

§ 95. THE CHARGE TO THE APOSTLES.

Matt. x.

[5b–15. v. § 33.]

Behold, I send you forth
as *sheep* in the midst of wolves:
be ye therefore wise as serpents,
and harmless as doves.

[17–22. v. § 72 (c).]

But when they persecute you in this city,
flee into the next: for verily I say unto you,
Ye shall not have gone through the cities of Israel,
till the Son of man be come.

A disciple is not above his master,
nor a servant above his lord.

Luke x.

3 *Go your ways:* behold, I send you forth
as *lambs* in the midst of wolves.

40 The disciple is not above his master:

§ 95. THE CHARGE TO THE APOSTLES (*continued*).

Matt. x, xi.

25 *It is enough for the disciple that he* be as his master,
and the servant as his lord.
If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub,
how much more shall they call them of his household!

27 What *I tell you* in the darkness,
speak ye in the light:
and what ye *hear* in the ear,
proclaim upon the housetops.

28 And be not afraid of them which kill the body,
but are not able to kill the soul:

but rather fear him which *is able to destroy*
both soul and body in hell.

29 Are not *two* sparrows sold for *a* farthing?
and not one of them *shall fall on the ground*
without your Father:
30 but the very hairs of your head are all numbered.
31 Fear not *therefore;*
ye are of more value than many sparrows.

32 Every one *therefore* who shall confess me before men,
him will *I* also confess
before *my Father which is in heaven.*
33 But whosoever shall deny me *before* men,
him *will I* also deny
before my Father which is in heaven.

F.
34 Think *not* that I came
to *send* peace on the earth:
I came not to send peace, but a *sword.*

35 For *I came to set a man at variance*
'against his father,

and the daughter against her mother,

and the daughter in law against her mother in law:
36 *and a man's foes shall be they of his own household.*'[a]

37 *He that loveth* father or mother *more than me*

is not worthy of me;
and he that loveth son or daughter more than me
is not worthy of me.

G. [38–39. v. § 47.]
H. [40 *He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.* v. § 52.]
41 *He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward.*
[42 *And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.* v. § 53.]
xi. 1 *And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and preach in their cities.*

Luke vi.

but every one when he is perfected shall be as his master.

Luke xii.

3 *Wherefore* whatsoever *ye have said* in the darkness
shall be heard in the light;
and what ye *have spoken* in the ear in *the inner chambers*
shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.
4 *And I say unto you my friends,*
Be not afraid of them which kill the body,
and *after that have no more that they can do.*
5 *But I will warn you whom ye shall fear:*
Fear him, which *after he hath killed*
hath power to cast into hell;
yea, I say unto you, fear him.
6 Are not *five* sparrows sold for *two* farthings?
and not one of them *is forgotten*
in the sight of God.
7 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.
Fear not:
ye are of more value than many sparrows.
8 *And I say unto you,*
Every one who shall confess me before men,
him shall *the Son of man* also confess
before *the angels of God:*
9 but he that denieth me *in the presence of* men,
shall be denied
in the presence of the angels of God.

51 Think *ye* that I am come
to *give* peace in the earth?
I tell you, Nay; but rather *division:*
52 *for there shall be from henceforth five in one house divided,*
three against two, and two against three.
53 *They shall be divided, father against son,*
and 'son against father';
mother against daughter,
and 'daughter against her mother';
mother in law against her daughter in law,
and 'daughter in law against her mother in law'.[a]

Luke xiv.

25 *Now there went with him great multitudes: and he turned*
and said unto them,
26 *If any man cometh unto me, and hateth not his own* father
and mother,
and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters,
yea, and his own life also,
he cannot be my disciple.
27 *Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me,*
cannot be my disciple.

[a] Mic. vii. 6.

§ 96. JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Matt. xi.

2 Now when John *heard in the prison*
the works of the Christ,
3 he sent by his disciples, and said unto him,

Art thou he that cometh,
or look we for another?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them,
Go your way and tell John
the things which ye *do* hear and see:
5 'the blind receive their sight,' and the lame walk,
the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear,
and the dead are raised up,
and 'the poor have good tidings preached to them', [a]
6 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find
none occasion of stumbling in me.

7 And *as these* went their way,
Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John,
What went ye out into the wilderness to behold?
a reed shaken with the wind?
8 But what went ye out for to see?
a man clothed in soft raiment?
Behold, they that *wear soft raiment*

are in kings' *houses*.
9 [1] But *wherefore* went ye out? to see a prophet?
Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.
10 This is he, of whom it is written,
'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,
Who shall prepare thy way before thee.' [b]
11 *Verily* I say unto you,
Among them that are born of women
there *hath not arisen* a greater than John *the Baptist:*
yet he that is but little in the kingdom of *heaven*
is greater than he.

12 And from *the days of John the Baptist until now*
the kingdom of *heaven suffereth violence,*
and *men of violence take* it *by force.*
13 For *all* the prophets and the law
prophesied until John.
14 *And if ye are willing to receive it,*
this is Elijah, which is to come.

16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation?

It is like unto children sitting in the marketplaces,
17 which call unto *their fellows*, and say,
We piped unto you, and ye did not dance;
we wailed, and ye did not *mourn*.
18 For John came neither eating nor drinking,

and *they* say, He hath a devil.

Luke vii.

18 And *the disciples* of John *told him*
of *all these things.*
19 And John *calling unto him two* of his disciples sent them *to the Lord*, saying,
Art thou he that cometh,
or look we for another?
20 *And when the men were come unto him, they said, John the Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that cometh,*
21 *or look we for another? | In that hour he cured many of diseases and plagues and evil spirits; and on many that were blind he bestowed sight.*
22 And he answered and said unto them,
Go your way, and tell John
what things ye *have* seen and heard;
'the blind receive their sight,' the lame walk,
the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear,
the dead are raised up,
'the poor have good tidings preached to them.' [a]
23 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find
none occasion of stumbling in me.

24 And when *the messengers of John* were departed,
he began to say unto the multitudes concerning John,
What went ye out into the wilderness to behold?
a reed shaken with the wind?
25 But what went ye out to see?
a man clothed in soft raiment?
Behold, they which *are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately,*
are in kings' *courts*.
26 But what went ye out to see? a prophet?
Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.
27 This is he of whom it is written,
'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,
Who shall prepare thy way before thee.' [b]
28 I say unto you,
Among them that are born of women
there *is none* greater than John:
yet he that is but little in the kingdom of *God*
is greater than he.

Luke xvi.

16b from *that time*
the *gospel* of the kingdom of *God is preached,*
and *every man entereth violently* into it.
16a The law and the prophets
were until John:

Luke vii.

29 *And all the people when they heard, and the publicans, justified*
30 *God, being baptized with the baptism of John. | But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected for themselves the counsel of God, being not baptized of him.*
31 Whereunto then shall I liken *the men* of this generation,
and to what are they like?
32 They are like unto children that sit in the marketplace,
and call one to *another;* which say,
We piped unto you, and ye did not dance;
we wailed, and ye did not *weep*.
33 For John *the Baptist* is come eating *no bread* nor drinking *wine;*
And *ye* say, He hath a devil.

[a] Isa. lxi. 1. [b] Mal. iii. 1.
[1] M. But what went ye out to see? a prophet?

§ 96. JOHN THE BAPTIST (*continued*).

Matt. xi.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking,
and *they* say,
Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber,
a friend of publicans and sinners!
And wisdom is justified *by her* [1] *works.*

Luke vii.

34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking
and *ye* say,
Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber,
a friend of publicans and sinners!
35 And wisdom is justified *of all her children.*

§ 97. WOE TO UNBELIEVING CITIES.

Matt. xi.

20 *Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his*
mighty works were done, because they repented not.
21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin!
Woe unto thee, Bethsaida!
for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon
which were done in you,
they would have repented long ago
in sackcloth and ashes.
22 Howbeit *I say unto you,*
it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon
in the *day of* judgement, than for you.
23 And thou, Capernaum,
shalt thou 'be exalted unto heaven?
thou shalt *go* down unto Hades': [a]
for if the mighty works had been done in Sodom
which were done in thee,
it would have remained until this day.
24 *Howbeit* I say unto you,
that it shall be more tolerable for *the land of* Sodom
in the day *of judgement,* than for *thee.*

Luke x.

13 Woe unto thee, Chorazin!
Woe unto thee, Bethsaida!
for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon
which were done in you,
they would have repented long ago,
sitting in sackcloth and ashes.
14 Howbeit
it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon
in the judgement, than for you.
15 And thou, Capernaum,
shalt thou be 'exalted unto heaven?
thou shalt *be brought* down unto Hades.' [a]

12 I say unto you,
It shall be more tolerable in *that* day for Sodom,
than for *that city.*

§ 98. THREE MEDITATIONS.

Matt. xi.

25 At that *season* Jesus *answered* and said,
I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,
that thou didst hide these things
from the wise and understanding,
and didst reveal them unto babes:
26 yea, Father, for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.

27 All things have been delivered unto me of my Father:
and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father;
neither doth any know the Father, save the Son,
and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.

28 *Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I*
29 *will give you rest. | Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me;*
for I am meek and lowly in heart: and 'ye shall find rest unto
30 *your souls.'* [b] *| For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.*

Luke x.

21 In that *same hour* he *rejoiced in the Holy Spirit,* and said
I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,
that thou didst hide these things
from the wise and understanding,
and didst reveal them unto babes:
yea, Father; for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.

22 All things have been delivered unto me of my Father:
and no one knoweth *who* the Son *is,* save the Father;
and *who* the Father *is,* save the Son,
and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.

§ 99. ON THE IMPORTANCE OF WORDS.

Matt. xii.

33 *Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree*
corrupt, and its fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by its
34 *fruit. | Ye offspring of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak*
good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth
35 *speaketh. | The good man out of his good treasure bringeth*
forth good things: and the evil man out of his evil treasure
36 *bringeth forth evil things. | And I say unto you, that every idle*
word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in
37 *the day of judgement. | For by thy words thou shalt be justified,*
and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

[a] Isa. xiv. 13, 15.
[b] Jer. vi. 16.
[1] M. children.

§ 100. 'THIS GENERATION.'

Matt. xii.

41 The men of Nineveh shall stand up
in the judgement with this generation,
and shall condemn it:
for they repented at the preaching of Jonah;
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.
42 The queen of the south shall rise up
in the judgement with this generation,
and shall condemn *it:*
for she came from the ends of the earth
to hear the wisdom of Solomon;
and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

Luke xi.

32 The men of Nineveh shall stand up
in the judgement with this generation,
and shall condemn it:
for they repented at the preaching of Jonah;
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.
31 The queen of the south shall rise up
in the judgement with *the men of* this generation,
and shall condemn *them:*
for she came from the ends of the earth
to hear the wisdom of Solomon;
and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

§ 101. 'THE UNCLEAN SPIRIT.'

Matt. xii.

43 *But* the unclean spirit,
when he is gone out of the man,
passeth through waterless places, seeking rest,
44 and findeth *it not. Then* he saith,
I will return into my house whence I came out;
and when he is come,
he findeth it *empty,* swept, and garnished.
45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself
seven other spirits more evil than himself,
and they enter in and dwell there:
and the last state of that man
becometh worse than the first.
Even so shall it be also unto this evil generation.

Luke xi.

24 The unclean spirit
when he is gone out of the man,
passeth through waterless places, seeking rest;
and finding *none,* he saith,
I will turn back unto my house whence I came out.
25 And when he is come,
he findeth it swept and garnished.
26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him
seven other spirits more evil than himself;
and they enter in and dwell there:
and the last state of that man
becometh worse than the first.

§ 102. 'BLESSED ARE YOUR EYES.'

Matt. xiii.

16 *But* blessed are *your* eyes, for they see;
and your ears, for they hear.
17 For *verily* I say unto you,
that many prophets and *righteous men*
desired to see the things which ye see,
and saw them not;
and to hear the things which ye hear,
and heard them not.

Luke x.

23 *And turning to the disciples, he said privately,*
Blessed are *the* eyes which see *the things that ye see:*

24 for I say unto you,
that many prophets and *kings*
desired to see the things which ye see,
and saw them not;
and to hear the things which ye hear,
and heard them not.

§ 103. PARABLES OF THE KINGDOM.

Matt. xiii.

24 *Another parable set he before them, saying, The kingdom of*
heaven is likened unto a man that sowed good seed in his
25 *field: | but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares*
26 *also among the wheat, and went away. | But when the blade*
sprang up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares
27 *also. | And the servants of the householder came and said*
unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field?
28 *whence then hath it tares? | And he said unto them, An*
enemy hath done this. And the servants say unto him, Wilt
29 *thou then that we go and gather them up? | But he saith,*
Nay; lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the
30 *wheat with them. | Let both grow together until the harvest:*
and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers,
Gather up first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn
them: but gather the wheat into my barn.
[31–32. v. § 28.]

31 *Another parable spake he unto them;*

Luke xiii.

18 *And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken*

§ 103. PARABLES OF THE KINGDOM (*continued*).

Matt. xiii.

The kingdom of *heaven* is like unto leaven,
which a woman took,
and hid in three measures of meal,
till it was all leavened.

D. [34–35. v. § 28.]

E.

36 *Then he left the multitudes, and went into the house: and*
his disciples came unto him, saying, Explain unto us the
37 *parable of the tares of the field.* | *And he answered and said,*
38 *He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man;* | *and the*
field is the world; and the good seed, these are the sons of
39 *the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one;* | *and*
the enemy that sowed them is the devil: and the harvest is
40 *the end of the world; and the reapers are angels.* | *As*
therefore the tares are gathered up and burned with fire; so
41 *shall it be in the end of the world.* | *The Son of man shall*
send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his
kingdom 'all things that cause stumbling, and them that do
42 *iniquity,'* [a] | *and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there*
43 *shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.* | *Then 'shall the*
righteous shine forth' [b] *as the sun in the kingdom of their*
Father. He that hath ears, let him hear.

F.

44 *The kingdom of heaven is like unto a treasure hidden in*
the field; which a man found, and hid; and in his joy he
goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

G.

45 *Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a*
46 *merchant seeking goodly pearls:* | *and having found one*
pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and
bought it.

H.

47 *Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast*
48 *into the sea, and gathered of every kind:* | *which, when it was*
filled, they drew up on the beach; and they sat down, and
gathered the good into vessels, but the bad they cast away. |
49 *So shall it be in the end of the world: the angels shall come*
50 *forth, and sever the wicked from among the righteous,* | *and*
shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the
weeping and gnashing of teeth.

I.

51 *Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him,*
52 *Yea.* | *And he said unto them. Therefore every scribe who*
hath been made a disciple to the kingdom of heaven is like
unto a man that is a householder, which bringeth forth out
of his treasure things new and old.

Luke xiii.

21 the kingdom of *God?* It is like unto leaven,
which a woman took,
and hid in three measures of meal,
till it was all leavened.

§ 104. 'SIGNS OF THE TIMES.'

Matt. xvi.

1 *And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him*
asked him to shew them a sign from heaven.
2 But he *answered* and said unto *them,*
When *it is evening,*
ye say,
It will be fair weather:
for the heaven is red.
3 And *in the morning,*
It will be *foul weather to-day:*
for the heaven is red and lowering.
Ye know how to *discern*
the face of the heaven;
but ye *cannot*
discern the signs of the times.

Luke xii.

54 And he said to *the multitudes also,*
When *ye see a cloud rising in the west,*
straightway ye say,
There cometh a shower;
and so it cometh to pass.
55 And *when ye see a south wind blowing,*
ye say, There will be *a scorching heat;*
and it cometh to pass.
56 *Ye hypocrites,* ye know how to *interpret*
the face of *the earth and* the heaven;
but *how is it that* ye *know not*
how to interpret this time?

[a] Zeph. i. 3.

[b] Dan. xii. 3.

§ 105. THE COIN IN THE FISH'S MOUTH.

Matt. xvii.

And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received the half-shekel came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay the half-shekel? | He saith, Yea. And when he came into the house, Jesus spake first to him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? the kings of the earth, from whom do they receive toll or tribute? from their sons, or from strangers? | And when he said, From strangers, Jesus said unto him, Therefore the sons are free. | But, lest we cause them to stumble, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a shekel: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

§ 106. THE LOST SHEEP.

Matt. xviii.

How think ye?
If any man have a hundred sheep,
and one of them *be gone astray*,
doth he not leave the ninety and nine,
and go unto the mountains,
and *seek* that which *goeth astray*?
And *if so be that* he find it,
verily I say unto you,
he rejoiceth over it
more than over *the* ninety and nine
which *have not gone astray*.
Even so it is not the will
of [1]*your Father which is in heaven*,
that one of these little ones should perish.

Luke xv.

[1] *Now all the publicans and sinners were drawing near unto*
[2] *him for to hear him. | And both the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.*
[3] *And he spake unto them this parable, saying,*
[4] What man *of you*, having a hundred sheep,
and *having lost* one of them,
doth not leave the ninety and nine
in the wilderness,
and *go after* that which *is lost, until he find it?*
[5] And *when* he hath found it
he *layeth it on his shoulders*, rejoicing.
[6] *And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and his neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me, for*
[7] *I have found my sheep which was lost. | I say unto you, that even so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth*,
more than over ninety and nine *righteous persons*,
which *need no repentance.*

§ 107. ECCLESIASTICAL SAYINGS.

Matt. xviii.

And if thy brother sin [2]*against thee*,
go, shew him his fault between thee and him alone:
if he *hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.*
But if he hear thee not, take with thee one or two more, that
'at the mouth of two witnesses or three every word may be established.' [a] *| And if he refuse to hear them, tell it unto the church: and if he refuse to hear the church also, let him be unto thee as the Gentile and the publican.*

Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. | For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Luke xvii.

[3] *Take heed to yourselves:* if thy brother sin,
rebuke him;
and if he *repent, forgive him.*

[a] Deut. xix. 15.
[1] M. my.
[2] M. *omit* against thee.

§ 108. THE UNMERCIFUL SERVANT.

Matt. xviii.

21 *Then came Peter, and said to him,*
Lord, how oft shall *my brother* sin against *me,*
and I forgive him ?
until seven times ?
22 *Jesus saith unto him,*
I say not unto thee, Until seven times;
but, Until seventy times seven.
23 *Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain*
24 *king, which would make a reckoning with his servants. | And*
when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him,
25 *which owed him ten thousand talents. | But forasmuch as he*
had not wherewith to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold,
and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment
26 *to be made. | The servant therefore fell down and worshipped*
him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee
27 *all. | And the lord of that servant, being moved with compassion,*
28 *released him, and forgave him the debt. | But that servant went*
out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him a
hundred pence: and he laid hold on him, and took him by the
29 *throat, saying, Pay what thou owest. | So his fellow-servant*
fell down and besought him, saying, Have patience with me,
30 *and I will pay thee. | And he would not: but went and cast*
31 *him into prison, till he should pay that which was due. | So*
when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were
exceeding sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that
32 *was done. | Then his lord called him unto him, and saith to*
33 *him, Thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because*
34 *thou besoughtest me: | shouldest not thou also have had mercy*
on thy fellow-servant, even as I had mercy on thee? | And his
35 *lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he*
should pay all that was due. | So shall also my heavenly
Father do unto you, if ye forgive not every one his brother
from your hearts.

Luke xvii.

4 And if he sin against *thee* seven times *in the day,*
and seven times turn again to thee, saying, I repent;
thou shalt forgive him.

§ 109. THE LABOURERS IN THE VINEYARD.

Matt. xx.

1 *For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a house-*
holder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers
2 *into his vineyard. | And when he had agreed with the labourers*
3 *for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. | And he*
went out about the third hour, and saw others standing in the
4 *marketplace idle; | and to them he said, Go ye also into the*
vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they
5 *went their way. | Again he went out about the sixth and the*
6 *ninth hour, and did likewise. | And about the eleventh hour*
he went out, and found others standing; and he saith unto
7 *them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? | They say unto him,*
Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye
8 *also into the vineyard. | And when even was come, the lord of*
the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and
pay them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first. |
9 *And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour,*
10 *they received every man a penny. | And when the first came,*
they supposed that they would receive more; and they likewise
11 *received every man a penny. | And when they received it, they*
12 *murmured against the householder, | saying, These last have*
spent but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us,
which have borne the burden of the day and the scorching heat. |
13 *But he answered and said to one of them, Friend, I do thee*
14 *no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? | Take*
up that which is thine, and go thy way; it is my will to give
15 *unto this last, even as unto thee. | Is it not lawful for me to do*
what I will with mine own? or is thine eye evil, because I am
16 *good? | So the last shall be first, and the first last.*

§ 110. THE PARABLE OF THE TWO SONS.

Matt. xxi.

28 *But what think ye? A man had two sons; and he came to*
29 *the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in the vineyard. | And*
he answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented
himself, and went. | And he came to the second, and said like-
30 *wise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not. |*
31 *Whether of the twain did the will of his father? They say,*
The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that
the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God
32 *before you. | For John came unto you in the way of righteous-*
ness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the
harlots believed him: and ye, when ye saw it, did not even
repent yourselves afterward, that ye might believe him.

§ 111. THE PARABLE OF THE MARRIAGE FEAST.

Matt. xxii.

1 And Jesus *answered and spake again*
in parables unto *them*, saying,
2 *The kingdom of heaven is likened* unto a certain *king*,
which made a *marriage feast for his son*,
3 and sent forth his servants
to *call* them that were bidden to *the marriage feast:*

and they *would not come.*
4 *Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them that*
are bidden, Behold, I have made ready my dinner: my oxen
and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to
5 *the marriage feast. | But they made light of it, and went*
their ways, one to his own farm, another to his merchandise: |
6 *and the rest laid hold on his servants, and entreated them*
shamefully, and killed them.
7 But the *king was wroth;*
and he sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and
burned their city.
8 *Then* saith he to his servants,
The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were not
worthy.

9 Go ye *therefore* into the *partings of* the highways,
and *as many as ye shall find,*
bid to the marriage feast.
10 *And those servants went out into the highways, and gathered*
together all as many as they found, both bad and good:
and the wedding was filled *with guests.*

11 *But when the king came in to behold the guests, he saw*
there a man which had not on a wedding-garment: | and he
12 *saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having*
a wedding-garment? And he was speechless. | Then the king
13 *said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him*
out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and
gnashing of teeth. | For many are called, but few chosen.

Luke xiv.

15 *And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these*
things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread
in the kingdom of God.
16 But he said unto *him,*

A certain *man*
made a *great supper; and he bade many:*
17 and he sent forth his servant *at supper time*
to *say* to them that were bidden, *Come; for all things are*
now ready.
18 And they *all with one consent began to make excuse.*
The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must
19 *needs go out and see it: I pray thee have me excused. | And*
another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to
20 *prove them: I pray thee have me excused. | And another*
said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. |
21 *And the servant came, and told his lord these things.*

Then the *master of the house being angry*

said to his servant,

Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and
bring in hither the poor and maimed and blind and lame. |
22 *And the servant said, Lord, what thou didst command is*
23 *done, and yet there is room. | And the lord said unto the*
servant,
Go out into the highways *and hedges,*
and *constrain them to come in,*

that my house may be filled
24 *For I say unto you, that none of those men which were*
bidden shall taste of my supper.

§ 112. WOE TO SCRIBES AND PHARISEES.

Matt. xxiii. **Luke xi.**

A. [1–10. v. § 70.]

B.

11 *But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.* |
12 *And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted.*

C.

13 But woe unto you, *scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!*
because ye *shut the kingdom of heaven against men:*
for ye enter not in yourselves,
neither suffer ye them that are entering in *to enter.*[1]

52 Woe unto you *lawyers!*
for ye *took away the key of knowledge:*
ye entered not in yourselves,
and them that were entering in ye *hindered.*

D.

15 *Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is become so, ye make him twofold more a son of hell than yourselves.*

E.

16 *Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear*
17 *by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor.* | *Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that hath*
18 *sanctified the gold?* | *And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gift that is*
19 *upon it, he is a debtor.* | *Ye blind. for whether is greater,*
20 *the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?* | *He therefore that sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things*
21 *thereon.* | *And he that sweareth by the temple, sweareth by it,*
22 *and by him that dwelleth therein.* | *And he that sweareth by the heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.*

F.

23 Woe unto you, *scribes* and Pharisees, *hypocrites!*
for ye tithe mint and *anise and cummin,*
and *have left undone the weightier matters of the law,*
judgement, and *mercy, and faith:*
but these ye ought to have done,
and not to have left the other undone.
24 *Ye blind guides, which strain out the gnat,*
and swallow the camel.

42 But woe unto you Pharisees!
for ye tithe mint and *rue and every herb,*
and *pass over*
judgement and *the love of God:*
but these ought ye to have done,
and not to leave the other undone.

37 *Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to dine with him:*
38 *and he went in, and sat down to meat.* | *And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed*
39 *before dinner.* | *And the Lord said unto him,*

Now do ye Pharisees
cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter;
but *your inward part* is full of extortion and *wickedness.*
40 *Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside also?*
41 *Howbeit give for alms those things which are* within;
and behold, all things are clean *unto you.*

G.

25 *Woe* unto you, *scribes* and Pharisees, *hypocrites!*
for ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter,
but *within they* are full from extortion and *excess.*
26 *Thou blind Pharisee,*

cleanse first the inside *of the cup and of the platter,*
that the outside thereof may become clean *also.*

H.

27 Woe unto you, *scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!*
for ye are like unto *whited sepulchres,*

which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of
28 *dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.* | *Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.*

44 Woe unto you!
for ye are as the *tombs which appear not,*
and the men that walk over them know it not.

45 *And one of the lawyers answering saith unto him, Master,*
46 *in saying this thou reproachest us also.* | *And he said, Woe unto you lawyers also! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.*

[1] M. *add* 14. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, even while for a pretence ye make long prayers: therefore ye shall receive greater condemnation.

§ 112. WOE TO SCRIBES AND PHARISEES (*continued*).

Matt. xxiii.

Woe unto you, *scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!*
for ye build the *sepulchres* of the prophets,
and garnish the tombs *of the righteous, and say,*
If we had been in the days of our fathers,
we should not have been partakers with them
in the blood of the prophets.
Wherefore ye witness *to yourselves,*
that ye are sons of them that slew *the prophets.*
Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.
Ye serpents, ye offspring of vipers,
how shall ye escape the judgement of hell?
Therefore, *behold,* I send unto *you* prophets,

and *wise men, and scribes:*
some of them shall *ye* kill *and crucify;*
and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues,
and persecute *from city to city:*
that upon *you* may *come*

all the *righteous* blood shed *on the earth,*
from the blood of Abel *the righteous*
unto the blood of Zachariah *the son of Barachiah,*
whom *ye slew* between the sanctuary and the altar.
Verily I say unto you,
all these things shall *come* upon this generation.

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem,
which killeth the prophets,
and stoneth them that are sent unto her!
how often would I have gathered thy children together,
even as a hen gathereth her *chickens* under her wings,
and ye would not!
Behold, 'your house is left unto you desolate.' [a]
For I say unto you,
Ye shall not see me *henceforth,*
till ye shall say,
'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.' [b]

Luke xi.

Woe unto you!
for ye build the tombs of the prophets,
and your fathers *killed them.*

So ye are witnesses *and consent unto the works of your fathers:*
for they killed *them, and ye build their tombs.*

Therefore *also said the wisdom of God,* I *will* send unto *them*
prophets
and *apostles;*
and some of them *they* shall kill

and persecute;
that the blood of all the *prophets,* which was shed *from*
the foundation of the world,
may *be required* of *this generation;*
from the blood of Abel
unto the blood of Zachariah,
who *perished* between the altar and the sanctuary:
yea, I say unto you,
it shall *be required* of this generation.

Luke xiii.

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem,
which killeth the prophets,
and stoneth them that are sent unto her!
how often would I have gathered thy children together,
even as a hen gathereth her *own brood* under her wings,
and ye would not!
Behold, 'your house is left unto you desolate:' [a]
and I say unto you,
Ye shall not see me
until ye shall say,
'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.' [b]

§ 113. READINESS FOR CHRIST'S COMING.

Matt. xxiv.

But know this,
that if the master of the house had known
in what *watch* the thief was coming,
he would have watched,
and would not have *suffered*
his house to be broken through.
Therefore be ye also ready:
for in an hour that ye think not
the Son of man cometh.

Who then is the faithful and wise *servant,*
whom his lord *hath* set over his household,
to give them their food in due season?
Blessed is that servant,
whom his lord when he cometh
shall find so doing.
Verily I say unto you,
that he will set him over all that he hath.

Luke xii.

But know this,
that if the master of the house had known
in what *hour* the thief was coming,
he would have watched,
and not have *left*
his house to be broken through.
Be ye also ready:
for in an hour that ye think not
the Son of man cometh.
And Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or
even unto all? | And the Lord said,
Who then is the faithful and wise *steward,*
whom his lord *shall* set over his household,
to give them their *portion* of food in due season?
Blessed is that servant,
whom his lord when he cometh
shall find so doing.
Of a truth I say unto you,
that he will set him over all that he hath.

[a] Jer. xxii. 5, xii. 7. [b] Ps. cxviii. 26.

§ 113. READINESS FOR CHRIST'S COMING (*continued*).

Matt. xxiv.

48 But if that *evil* servant shall say in his heart,
My lord *tarrieth;*
49 and shall begin to beat his *fellow*-servants,

and shall eat and drink *with* the drunken;
50 the lord of that servant shall come
in a day when he expecteth not,
and in an hour when he knoweth not,
51 and shall cut him asunder,
and appoint his portion with the *hypocrites:*
there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Luke xii.

45 But if that servant shall say in his heart,
My lord *delayeth his coming;*
and shall begin to beat the *men*servants and the *maid*
servants,
and to eat and drink, *and to be* drunken;
46 the lord of that servant shall come
in a day when he expecteth not,
and in an hour when he knoweth not,
and shall cut him asunder,
and appoint his portion with the *unfaithful.*

47 *And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and made no*
ready, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with
48 *many stripes; | but he that knew not, and did things worthy*
of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. And to whomso
ever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to
whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.

§ 114. THE PARABLE OF THE TEN VIRGINS.

Matt. xxv.

1 *Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten*
virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the
2 *bridegroom. | And five of them were foolish, and five were*
3 *wise. | For the foolish, when they took their lamps, took no oil*
4 *with them: | but the wise took oil in their vessels with their*
5 *lamps. | Now while the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered*
6 *and slept. | But at midnight there is a cry, Behold, the*
7 *bridegroom! Come ye forth to meet him. | Then all those*
8 *virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. | And the foolish said*
unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are going
9 *out. | But the wise answered, saying, Peradventure there will*
not be enough for us and you: go ye rather to them that sell,
10 *and buy for yourselves. | And while they went away to buy,*
the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with
11 *him to the marriage feast: and the door was shut. | Afterward*
come also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.
12 *But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you*
13 *not. | Watch therefore, for ye know not the day nor the hour.*

[Cf. Luke xii.

35 Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps burning;
36 and be ye yourselves like unto men looking for their lord,
when he shall return from the marriage feast; that,
when he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open
37 unto him. | Blessed are those servants, whom the lord
when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you,
that he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to
38 meat, and shall come and serve them. | And if he shall come
in the second watch, and if in the third, and find them so,
blessed are those servants.]

§ 115. THE PARABLE OF THE TALENTS.

Matt. xxv.

14 *For it is as when* a man,
going into *another* country,

called his own servants,
and delivered unto them *his goods.*
15 *And unto one he gave five talents,*
to another two, to another one;
to each according to his several ability;
and he went on his journey.

16 *Straightway he that received the five talents went and traded*
17 *with them, and made other five talents. | In like manner he*
18 *also that received the two gained other two. | But he that*
received the one went away and digged in the earth, and hid
his lord's money.

Luke xix.

11 *And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable,*
because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they supposed
12 *that the kingdom of God was immediately to appear. | He*
said therefore,
A certain *nobleman*
went into *a far* country, *to receive for himself a kingdom,*
and to return.
13 And he called *ten* servants of his,
and gave them *ten pounds,*
and said unto them, Trade ye herewith till I come.

14 *But his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him,*
saying, We will not that this man reign over us.

§ 115. THE PARABLE OF THE TALENTS (*continued*).

Matt. xxv.

14 Now *after a long time*
the lord of those servants cometh,

and maketh a reckoning with them.

19 And *he that received the five talents* came
and brought other five talents, saying,
Lord, *thou deliveredst unto me five talents:*
lo, I have gained other five talents.
21 *His lord* said unto him,
Well done, good *and faithful* servant:
thou *hast been* faithful over a *few things*,
I will set thee over *many things:*
enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
22 And *he also that received the two talents* came and said,
Lord, *thou deliveredst unto me two talents:*
lo, I have gained other two talents.
23 *His lord* said unto him,
Well done, good and faithful servant;
thou hast been faithful over a few things,
I will set thee over *many things:*
enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
24 And *he also that had received the one talent came and said*, Lord,
I knew thee that thou art a *hard* man,
reaping where thou didst not sow,
and *gathering* where thou *didst not scatter:*
25 and I was afraid, *and went away*
and *hid thy talent* in *the earth:*
lo, *thou hast* thine *own.*
26 But *his lord answered* and said unto him,
Thou wicked *and slothful* servant,
thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not,

and *gather* where I *did not scatter;*
27 thou *oughtest* therefore to have *put* my money to the bankers,
and at my coming I should have received *back*
mine own with interest.
28 Take ye away *therefore* the *talent* from him,

and give it unto him that hath the ten *talents.*

29 For unto every one that hath shall be given,
and he shall have abundance:
but from him that hath not,
even that which he hath shall be taken away.
30 *And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

Luke xix.

15 And *it came to pass,*
when he was come *back again, having received the kingdom,*
that he commanded these servants, *unto whom he had given the money,*
to be called to him, that he might know what they had gained by trading.
16 And *the first* came before him,
saying,
Lord, *thy pound*
hath made ten pounds more.
17 And *he* said unto him,
Well done, thou good servant:
because thou *wast found* faithful in a *very little,*
have thou authority over *ten cities.*

18 And *the second* came, saying,
Thy pound, Lord,
hath made five pounds.
19 And *he* said unto him *also,*

Be thou *also* over *five cities.*

20a And *another* came, saying, Lord,
21b because thou art an *austere* man:
thou *takest up* that thou *layedst not down,*
and reapest that thou didst not sow.
21a for I feared thee,
20b behold, *here is* thy *pound,*
which I *kept laid up* in *a napkin:*
22 He saith unto him, *Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee,*
thou wicked servant.
Thou knewest that I *am an austere man, taking up* that I *laid not down,*
and reaping that I did not sow;
23 then wherefore *gavest* thou not my money into the bank,
and I at my coming should have received
it with interest?
24 *And he said unto them that stood by*, Take away from him
the *pound,*
and give it unto him that hath the ten *pounds.*
25 *And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.*
26 I *say unto you*, that unto every one that hath shall be given;

but from him that hath not,
even that which he hath shall be taken away from him.
27 *Howbeit these mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.*

§ 116. A PARABLE OF JUDGEMENT.

Matt. xxv.

But when the Son of man shall come in his glory, 'and all the angels with him,'[a] then shall he sit on the throne of his glory: | and before him shall be gathered all the nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as the shepherd separateth the sheep from the goats: | and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. | Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: | for I was an hungred,

[a] Zech. xiv. 5.

§ 116. A PARABLE OF JUDGEMENT (*continued*).

Matt. xxv.

and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink:
36 *I was a stranger, and ye took me in; | naked, and ye clothed*
me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye
37 *came unto me. | Then shall the righteous answer him, saying,*
Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or
38 *athirst, and gave thee drink? | And when saw we thee*
a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? |
39 *And when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto*
40 *thee? | And the King shall answer and say unto them,*
Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of
41 *these my brethren, even these least, ye did it unto me. | Then*
shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from
me, ye cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the
42 *devil and his angels: | for I was an hungred, and ye gave*
43 *me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: | I was*
a stranger, and ye took me not in; naked, and ye clothed me
44 *not; sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. | Then shall*
they also answer, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred,
or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and
45 *did not minister unto thee? | Then shall he answer them,*
saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not
46 *unto one of these least, ye did it not unto me. | And 'these'*
shall go away 'into eternal punishment: but the' righteous
'into eternal life.' [a]

§ 117. THE DEATH OF JUDAS.

Matt. xxvii.

3 *Then Judas, which betrayed him, when he saw that he was*
condemned, repented himself, and brought back the thirty
4 *pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, | saying, I have*
sinned in that I betrayed innocent blood. But they said,
5 *What is that to us? see thou to it. | And he cast down the*
pieces of silver into the sanctuary, and departed; and he
6 *went away and hanged himself. | And the chief priests took*
the pieces of silver, and said, It is not lawful to put them
7 *into the treasury, since it is the price of blood. | And they*
took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury
8 *strangers in. | Wherefore that field was called, The field of*
9 *blood, unto this day. | Then was fulfilled that which was*
spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, 'And they took the
thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was priced, whom
10 *certain of the children of Israel did price; | and they gave*
them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.' [b]

§ 118. THE GUARD (I).

Matt. xxvii.

62 *Now on the morrow, which is the day after the Preparation,*
the chief priests and the Pharisees were gathered together
63 *unto Pilate, | saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver*
said, while he was yet alive, After three days I rise again. |
64 *Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until*
the third day, lest haply his disciples come and steal him
away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead;
65 *and the last error will be worse than the first. | Pilate said*
unto them, Ye have a guard: go your way, make it as sure
66 *as ye can. | So they went, and made the sepulchre sure,*
sealing the stone, the guard being with them.

[a] Dan. xii. 2. [b] Zech. xi. 13.

§ 119. THE GUARD. (II.)

Matt. xxviii.

Now while they were going, behold, some of the guard came into the city, and told unto the chief priests all the things that were come to pass. | And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, | saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. | And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and rid you of care. | So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying was spread abroad among the Jews, and continueth until this day.

§ 120. CONCLUSION.

Matt. xxviii.

But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, unto the mountain where Jesus had appointed them. | And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted. | And Jesus came to them and spake unto them, saying, All authority hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth. | Go ye therefore, and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost: | teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world.

PART III

ST. LUKE

(OMITTING PASSAGES ALREADY PRINTED IN PART I)

§ 121. THE PROMISE OF THE BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke i.

5 *There was in the days of Herod, king of Judaea, a certain*
priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abijah: and he
had a wife of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was
6 *Elisabeth. | And they were both righteous before God, walking*
in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blame-
7 *less. | And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was*
barren, and they both were now well stricken in years.
8 *Now it came to pass, while he executed the priest's office*
9 *before God in the order of his course, | according to the*
custom of the priest's office, his lot was to enter into the
10 *temple of the Lord and burn incense. | And the whole*
multitude of the people were praying without at the hour of
11 *incense. | And there appeared unto him an angel of the*
12 *Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. | And*
Zacharias was troubled when he saw him, and fear fell upon
13 *him. | But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias:*
because thy supplication is heard, and thy wife Elisabeth
shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. |
14 *And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall*
15 *rejoice at his birth. | For he shall be great in the sight of the*
Lord, and 'he shall drink no wine nor strong drink';[a] *and he*
shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's
16 *womb. | And many of the children of Israel shall he turn*
17 *unto the Lord their God. | And he shall go before his face in*
the spirit and power of 'Elijah, to turn the hearts of the
fathers to the children,'[b] *and the disobedient to walk in the*
wisdom of the just; to make ready for the Lord a people
18 *prepared for him. | And Zacharias said unto the angel,*
Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my
19 *wife well stricken in years. | And the angel answering said*
unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God;
and I was sent to speak unto thee, and to bring thee these
20 *good tidings. | And behold, thou shalt be silent and not able*
to speak, until the day that these things shall come to pass,
because thou believedst not my words, which shall be fulfilled
21 *in their season. | And the people were waiting for Zacharias,*
22 *and they marvelled while he tarried in the temple. | And*
when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they
perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: and he
continued making signs unto them, and remained dumb. |
23 *And it came to pass, when the days of his ministration were*
fulfilled, he departed unto his house.
24 *And after these days Elisabeth his wife conceived; and*
25 *she hid herself five months, saying, | Thus hath the Lord*
done unto me in the days wherein he looked upon me, to
take away my reproach among men.

§ 122. THE ANNUNCIATION.

Luke i.

26 *Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from*
27 *God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, | to a virgin*
betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of
28 *David; and the virgin's name was Mary. | And he came in*

[a] Num. vi. 3. [b] Mal. iv. 4-5.

§ 122. THE ANNUNCIATION (*continued*).

Luke i.

unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the
29 *Lord is with thee.*[1] | *But she was greatly troubled at the*
saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this
30 *might be.* | *And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary:*
31 *for thou hast found favour with God.* | *And behold, thou*
shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt
32 *call his name Jesus.* | *He shall be great, and shall be called*
the Son of the Most High: and the Lord God shall give unto
33 *him 'the throne of' his father 'David:* | *and he shall reign' over*
the house of Jacob 'for ever';[a] *and of his kingdom there shall*
34 *be no end.* | *And Mary said unto the angel, How shall this*
35 *be, seeing I know not a man?* | *And the angel answered and*
said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and
the power of the Most High shall overshadow thee: where-
fore also that which is to be born [2]*shall be called holy, the*
36 *Son of God.* | *And behold, Elisabeth thy kinswoman, she*
also hath conceived a son in her old age: and this is the
37 *sixth month with her that was called barren.* | *'For no word*
38 *from God shall be void of power.'*[b] | *And Mary said, Behold,*
the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy
word. And the angel departed from her.

§ 123. THE VISITATION.

Luke i.

39 *And Mary arose in these days and went into the hill*
40 *country with haste, into a city of Judah;* | *and entered into*
41 *the house of Zacharias and saluted Elisabeth.* | *And it came*
to pass, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the
babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the
42 *Holy Ghost;* | *and she lifted up her voice with a loud cry,*
and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the
43 *fruit of thy womb.* | *And whence is this to me, that the*
44 *mother of my Lord should come unto me?* | *For behold,*
when the voice of thy salutation came into mine ears, the
45 *babe leaped in my womb for joy.* | *And blessed is she that*
believed; for there shall be a fulfilment of the things which
46 *have been spoken to her from the Lord.* | *And Mary said,*

My soul doth magnify the Lord,
47 *And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.*
48 *For he hath looked upon the low estate of his handmaiden:*
For behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me
blessed.
49 *For he that is mighty hath done to me great things;*
And holy is his name.
50 *And his mercy is unto generations and generations*
On them that fear him.
51 *He hath shewed strength with his arm;*
He hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their
heart.
52 *He hath put down princes from their thrones,*
And hath exalted them of low degree.
53 *The hungry he hath filled with good things;*
And the rich he hath sent empty away.
54 *He hath holpen Israel his servant,*
That he might remember mercy
55 *(As he spake unto our fathers)*
Toward Abraham and his seed for ever.
56 *And Mary abode with her about three months, and re-*
turned unto her house.

[a] Isa. ix. 7. [b] Gen. xviii. 14.
[1] M. *add* blessed art thou among women. [2] M. *add* of thee.

§ 124. THE BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke i.

57 *Now Elisabeth's time was fulfilled that she should be*
58 *delivered; and she brought forth a son.* | *And her neighbours*
and her kinsfolk heard that the Lord had magnified his
59 *mercy towards her; and they rejoiced with her.* | *And it*
came to pass on the eighth day, that they came to circumcise
the child; and they would have called him Zacharias, after
60 *the name of his father.* | *And his mother answered and said,*
61 *Not so; but he shall be called John.* | *And they said unto*
her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.|
62 *And they made signs to his father, what he would have him*
63 *called.* | *And he asked for a writing tablet, and wrote,*
64 *saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all.* | *And*
his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed,
65 *and he spake, blessing God.* | *And fear came on all that*
dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised
66 *abroad throughout all the hill country of Judaea.* | *And all*
that heard them laid them up in their heart, saying, What
then shall this child be? For the hand of the Lord was
with him.

67 *And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost,*
and prophesied, saying,

68 *Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel;*
For he hath visited and wrought redemption for his people,
69 *And hath raised up a horn of salvation for us*
In the house of his servant David
70 *(As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets which have*
been since the world began),
71 *Salvation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that*
hate us;
72 *To shew mercy towards our fathers,*
And to remember his holy covenant;
73 *The oath which he sware unto Abraham our father,*
74 *To grant unto us that we being delivered out of the hand*
of our enemies
Should serve him without fear,
75 *In holiness and righteousness before him all our days.*
76 *Yea and thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the*
Most High:
For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to make
ready his ways;
77 *To give knowledge of salvation unto his people*
In the remission of their sins,
78 *Because of the tender mercy of our God,*
Whereby the dayspring from on high [1] *shall visit us,*
79 *To shine upon them that sit in darkness and the shadow*
of death;
To guide our feet into the way of peace.

80 *And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was*
in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

§ 125. THE NATIVITY.

Luke ii.

1 *Now it came to pass in those days, there went out a decree*
from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be enrolled. |
2 *This was the first enrolment made when Quirinius was*
3 *governor of Syria.* | *And all went to enrol themselves, every*
4 *one to his own city.* | *And Joseph also went up from Galilee,*
out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, to the city of David,
which is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and
5 *family of David;* | *to enrol himself with Mary, who was*
6 *betrothed to him, being great with child.* | *And it came to*
pass, while they were there, the days were fulfilled that she

[1] M. hath visited.

§ 125. THE NATIVITY (*continued*).

Luke ii.

7 *should be delivered. | And she brought forth her firstborn*
son; and she wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid
him in a manger, because there was no room for them in
the inn.
8 *And there were shepherds in the same country abiding in*
9 *the field, and keeping watch by night over their flock. | And*
an angel of the Lord stood by them, and the glory of the
Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. |
10 *And the angel said unto them, Be not afraid; for behold,*
I bring you good tidings of great joy which shall be to all the
11 *people: | for there is born to you this day in the city of*
12 *David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. | And this is the*
sign unto you; Ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling
13 *clothes, and lying in a manger. | And suddenly there was*
with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God,
and saying,
14 *Glory to God in the highest,*
And on earth [1] *peace among men in whom he is well pleased.*
15 *And it came to pass, when the angels went away from*
them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us
now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing that is come
16 *to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. | And*
they came with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and
17 *the babe lying in the manger. | And when they saw it, they*
made known concerning the saying which was spoken to them
18 *about this child. | And all that heard it wondered at the*
19 *things which were spoken unto them by the shepherds. | But*
Mary kept all these sayings, pondering them in her heart. |
20 *And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God*
for all the things that they had heard and seen, even as it
was spoken unto them.

§ 126. THE CIRCUMCISION AND PRESENTATION.

Luke ii.

21 *And when eight days were fulfilled for circumcising him,*
his name was called Jesus, which was so called by the angel
before he was conceived in the womb.
22 *And when the days of their purification according to the*
law of Moses were fulfilled, they brought him up to Jerusalem,
23 *to present him to the Lord | (as it is written in the law of*
the Lord, 'Every male that openeth the womb shall be called
24 *holy to the Lord'* [a]), | *and to offer a sacrifice according to that*
which is said in the law of the Lord, 'A pair of turtle-doves,
25 *or two young pigeons.'* [b] | *And behold, there was a man in*
Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and this man was
righteous and devout, looking for the consolation of Israel:
26 *and the Holy Spirit was upon him. | And it had been*
revealed unto him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see
27 *death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. | And he came*
in the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought
in the child Jesus, that they might do concerning him after
28 *the custom of the law, | then he received him into his arms,*
and blessed God, and said,
29 *Now lettest thou thy servant depart, O Lord,*
According to thy word, in peace;
30 *For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,*
31 *Which thou hast prepared before the face of all peoples;*
32 *A light for revelation to the Gentiles,*
And the glory of thy people Israel.
33 *And his father and his mother were marvelling at the things*
34 *which were spoken concerning him; | and Simeon blessed*
them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is
set for the falling and rising up of many in Israel; and for

[a] Ex. xiii. 12. [b] Lev. xii. 8.
[1] M. peace, good pleasure among men.

§ 126. THE CIRCUMCISION AND PRESENTATION (*continued*).

Luke ii.

35 *a sign which is spoken against; | yea and a sword shall*
pierce through thine own soul; that thoughts out of many
36 *hearts may be revealed. | And there was one Anna, a*
prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher
(she was of a great age, having lived with a husband seven
37 *years from her virginity, | and she had been a widow even*
for fourscore and four years), which departed not from the
temple, worshipping with fastings and supplications night
38 *and day. | And coming up at that very hour she gave thanks*
unto God, and spake of him to all them that were looking
39 *for the redemption of Jerusalem. | And when they had*
accomplished all things that were according to the law of the
Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.
40 *And the child grew, and waxed strong, filled with wisdom:*
and the grace of God was upon him.

§ 127. JESUS AND THE DOCTORS IN THE TEMPLE.

Luke ii.

41 *And his parents went every year to Jerusalem at the feast*
42 *of the passover. | And when he was twelve years old, they*
43 *went up after the custom of the feast; | and when they had*
fulfilled the days, as they were returning, the boy Jesus
tarried behind in Jerusalem; and his parents knew it not; |
44 *but supposing him to be in the company, they went a day's*
journey; and they sought for him among their kinsfolk and
45 *acquaintance: | and when they found him not, they returned*
46 *to Jerusalem, seeking for him. | And it came to pass, after*
three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the
midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them
47 *questions: | and all that heard him were amazed at his*
48 *understanding and his answers. | And when they saw him,*
they were astonished: and his mother said unto him, Son,
why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I
49 *sought thee sorrowing. | And he said unto them, How is it*
that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be in my Father's
50 *house? | And they understood not the saying which he spake*
51 *unto them. | And he went down with them, and came to*
Nazareth; and he was subject unto them: and his mother
kept all these sayings in her heart.
52 *And Jesus advanced in wisdom and stature, and in favour*
with God and men.

§ 128. THE GENEALOGY.

Luke iii.

23 *And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty*
years of age, being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph, the
24 *son of Heli, | the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of*
25 *Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, | the son of*
Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli,
26 *the son of Naggai, | the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias,*
27 *the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of Joda, | the*
son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the
28 *son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri, | the son of Melchi, the son*
of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmadam, the son of
29 *Er, | the son of Jesus, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim,*
30 *the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, | the son of Symeon, the*
son of Judas, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonam, the son of
31 *Eliakim, | the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of*
32 *Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David, | the son of*
Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz, the son of Salmon
33 *the son of Nahshon, | the son of Amminadab, the son of*

[Cf. Matt. i.
2 Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; a
3 Jacob begat Judah and his brethren; | and Judah beg
Perez and Zerah of Tamar; and Perez begat Herzo
4 and Hezron begat Ram; | and Ram begat Amminada
and Amminadab begat Nahshon; and Nahshon beg
5 Salmon; | and Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab; and Bo
6 begat Obed of Ruth; | and Obed begat Jesse; and Je
begat David the king.
And David begat Solomon of her that had been t
7 wife of Uriah; | and Solomon begat Rehoboam; a
8 Rehoboam begat Abijah; and Abijah begat Asa; | and A
begat Jehoshaphat; and Jehoshaphat begat Joram; a
9 Joram begat Uzziah; | and Uzziah begat Jotham; a
10 Jotham begat Ahaz; and Ahaz begat Hezekiah; | a
Hezekiah begat Manasseh; and Manasseh begat Amon; a
11 Amon begat Josiah; | and Josiah begat Jechoniah and
brethren, at the time of the carrying away to Babylon.

§ 128. THE GENEALOGY (*continued*).

Luke iii.

Arni, the son of Hezron, the son of Perez, the son of Judah,
34 *the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the*
35 *son of Terah, the son of Nahor, the son of Serug, the son of*
Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the son of Shelah,
36 *the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem,*
37 *the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, the son of Methuselah,*
the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel,
38 *the son of Cainan, the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son*
of Adam, the son of God.

[Cf. Matt. i.

12 And after the carrying away to Babylon, Jechoniah
13 begat Shealtiel; and Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel; and
Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim;
14 and Eliakim begat Azor; and Azor begat Sadoc; and
15 Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; and Eliud
begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan
16 begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of
Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.
17 So all the generations from Abraham unto David are
fourteen generations; and from David unto the carrying
away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the
carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen
generations.]

§ 129. THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN.

Luke vi.

17 . . . and he *came down with them,*
and stood on a level place,
and a great multitude of his disciples,
and a great number of the people
from all Judaea and Jerusalem,
and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon,
which came to hear him,
and to be healed of their diseases;
18 *and they that were troubled with unclean spirits*
were healed.
19 *And all the multitude sought to touch him:*
for power came forth from him,
and healed them all.

20 And he *lifted up his eyes on his disciples,* and said,

Blessed are *ye* poor:
for *yours* is the kingdom of *God.*
21 Blessed are *ye* that hunger *now:*
for *ye* shall be filled.
Blessed are *ye* that weep *now:*
for *ye* shall *laugh.*

22 Blessed are ye, when men shall *hate* you,
and when they shall separate you from their company,
and reproach you,
and *cast out your name as evil,*
for *the Son of man's* sake.
23 Rejoice *in that day,* and *leap for joy:*
for *behold,* your reward is great in heaven:
for in the same manner
did *their fathers* unto the prophets.

Matt. v.

1 And *seeing the multitudes,*
he *went up into the mountain:*

and when he had sat down,
his disciples came unto him:
2 and he *opened his mouth and taught them,* saying,

3 Blessed are *the* poor *in spirit:*
for *theirs* is the kingdom of *heaven.*
6 Blessed are *they* that hunger *and thirst after righteousness:*
for *they* shall be filled.
4 Blessed are '*they* that *mourn*':[a]
for they 'shall be comforted'.[b]
5 *Blessed are 'the meek':*[c]
for they 'shall inherit the earth'.[d]
7 *Blessed are the merciful:*
for they shall obtain mercy.
8 *Blessed are 'the pure in heart':*[e]
for they shall see God.
9 *Blessed are the peacemakers:*
for they shall be called sons of God.
10 *Blessed are they that have been persecuted for righteousness'*
sake:
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
11 Blessed are ye when men shall

reproach you, and *persecute* you,
and *say all manner of evil against you falsely,*
for *my* sake.
12 Rejoice, and *be exceeding glad:*
for great is your reward in heaven:
for so
persecuted they the prophets *which were before you.*

[a] Isa. lxi. 1. [b] ibid. [c] Ps. xxxvii. 11. [d] ibid. [e] Ps. xxiv. 4.
[1] M. *transpose verses* 4 *and* 5.

§ 129. THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN (*continued*).

Luke vi. **Matt. v, vii.**

C.

24 *But woe unto you that are rich!*
for ye have received your consolation.
25 *Woe unto you, ye that are full now!*
for ye shall hunger.
Woe unto you, ye that laugh now!
for ye shall mourn and weep.
26 *Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you!*
for in the same manner
did their fathers to the false prophets.

D.

27 But I say unto you *which hear*,
Love your enemies,
do good to them that hate you.
28 *bless them that curse you,*
pray for them that *despitefully use* you.
29 To him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek
offer also the other;
and from him
that taketh away thy cloke
withhold not thy coat also.
30 Give to *every one* that asketh thee;
and of him that *taketh away thy goods*
ask them not again.
31 And as ye would
that men should do to you,
do ye also to them likewise.
32 And if ye love them that love you,
what *thank* have ye?
for even *sinners love those that love them.*
33 And if ye *do good to them*
that do good to you,
what *thank have* ye?
for even *sinners* do the same.
34 *And if ye lend to them*
of whom ye hope to receive,
what thank have ye?
even sinners lend to sinners
to receive again as much.
35 *But love your enemies, and do them good,*
and lend, [1] *never despairing;*
and your reward shall be great,
and ye shall be sons of *the Most High:*
for he *is kind toward the unthankful* and evil.

44 . . . but I say unto you,
Love your enemies,
and pray for them that *persecute* you;
39 . . . but whosoever smiteth thee on thy *right* cheek,
turn to him the other also.
40 And if any man would *go to law with thee*
and take away thy coat,
let him have thy cloke also.
42 Give to him that asketh thee,
and from him that *would borrow of thee*
turn not thou away.
vii. 12a *All things* therefore whatsoever ye would
that men should do unto you,
even so do ye also unto them:
v. 46 For if ye love them that love you,
what *reward* have ye?
do not even the *publicans* the same?
47 And if ye *salute*
your *brethren* only,
what *do* ye *more than others?*
do not even the *Gentiles* the same?

[42 Give to him that asketh thee,
and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away

45 . . . that ye may be sons of *your Father which is in heaven*
for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil *and the good,*
and sendeth rain on the just and the unjust.

E.

36 Be ye *merciful,*
even as your Father 'is *merciful.*' [b]
37 And judge not,
and ye *shall* not be judged:
and condemn not,
and ye shall not be condemned:
release, and ye shall be released:
38 *give, and it shall be given unto you;*
good measure, pressed down,
shaken together, running over,
shall they give into your bosom.
For with what measure ye mete
it shall be measured to you *again.*

48 'Ye' *therefore* '*shall* be *perfect,*' [a]
as your *heavenly* Father is *perfect.*
vii. 1 Judge not,
that ye be not judged.

2 *For with what judgement ye judge,*
ye shall be judged:
and with what measure ye mete,
it shall be measured unto you.

F.

39 *And he spake also a parable unto them,*
Can the blind guide the blind?

Matt. xv.

14 [*Let them alone: they are blind guides.*]
And if the blind guide the blind,

[a] Deut. xviii. 13. [b] Ps. ciii. 8.
[1] M. despairing of no man.

§ 129. THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN (*continued*).

Luke vi.

shall they *not* both fall into a pit?

40 The disciple is not above his master:

but every one when he is perfected
shall be as his master.

41 And why beholdest thou the mote
that is in thy brother's eye,
but considerest not the beam
that is in thine own eye?
42 Or how *canst* thou say to thy brother,
Brother, let me cast out the mote
that is in thine eye,
when thou beholdest not the beam
that is in thine own eye?
Thou hypocrite,
cast out first the beam
out of thine own eye,
and then shalt thou see clearly
to cast out the mote
that is in thy brother's eye.

43 For there is no good tree
that bringeth forth *corrupt* fruit;

nor again a corrupt tree
that bringeth forth good fruit.
44 For *each* tree is known by its *own* fruit.

For of thorns men do not gather figs,

nor of a *bramble bush* gather they grapes.
45 The good man out of the good treasure *of his heart*

bringeth forth that which is good;
and the evil man out of the evil treasure

bringeth forth that which is evil:

for out of the abundance of the heart

his mouth speaketh.

46 *And why call ye* me, Lord, Lord,

and do *not the things which I say?*

47 Every one that *cometh unto me,*
and heareth my words,
and doeth them,
I will shew you unto whom he is like:
48 he *is* like a man
building a house,
who digged and went deep,
and laid a foundation
upon the rock:
and when a flood *arose,*

Matt. x.

both shall fall into a pit.

24 A disciple is not above his master,
nor a servant above his lord.
25 *It is enough for the disciple*
that he be as his master,
and the servant as his lord.

Matt. vii.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote
that is in thy brother's eye,
but considerest not the beam
that is in thine own eye?
4 Or how *wilt* thou say to thy brother,
Let me cast out the mote
out of thine eye;
and lo, the beam
is in thine own eye?
5 Thou hypocrite,
cast out first the beam
out of thine own eye;
and then shalt thou see clearly
to cast out the mote
out of thy brother's eye.

Matt. xii.

18 A good tree
cannot bring forth *evil* fruit,
neither can a corrupt tree
bring forth good fruit.
20 Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them.
16 By their fruits ye shall know them.
Do men gather grapes of thorns,
or figs of *thistles?*

33 *Either make* the tree good
and its fruit good;

or make the tree corrupt,
and its fruit corrupt:
for the tree is known by its fruit.

35 The good man out of his good treasure
bringeth forth good things:
and the evil man out of his evil treasure
bringeth forth evil things.
34 *Ye offspring of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things?*
for out of the abundance of the heart
the mouth speaketh.

21 *Not every one that saith unto* me, Lord, Lord,
shall enter into the kingdom of heaven;
but he that doeth *the will of my Father which is in heaven.*

24 Every one *therefore*
which heareth *these* words of mine,
and doeth them,

shall be likened unto a *wise* man,
which built his house

upon the rock:
25 *and the rain descended,* and the floods *came,*

§ 129. THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN (*continued*).

Luke vi.

the stream brake against that house,
and *could not shake* it:
[1] because it had been *well builded.*
[49] But he that heareth
and doeth not,
is like a man
that built a house upon the *earth*
without a foundation;
against which the stream brake,
and *straightway* it fell *in:*
and the *ruin* of that house was great.

Matt. vii.

and the winds blew, and beat upon that house;
and it *fell not:*
for it was *founded upon the rock.*
[26] And *every one that* heareth *these words of mine,*
and doeth them not,
shall be likened unto a *foolish* man,
which built his house upon the *sand:*
[27] *And the rain descended, and the floods came,*
and the winds blew, and smote upon that house;
and it fell:
and great was the *fall* thereof.

§ 130. THE CENTURION'S SERVANT.

Luke vii.

[1] *After he had ended all his sayings in the ears of the people,*
he entered into Capernaum.
[2] And a *certain* centurion's

servant, *who was dear unto him,*
was sick and *at the point of death.*
[3] *And when he heard concerning Jesus, he sent unto him elders*
of the Jews, asking him that he would come and save his
[4] *servant. | And they, when they came to Jesus, besought him*
earnestly, saying, He is worthy that thou shouldest do this
[5] *for him: | for he loveth our nation, and himself built us our*
synagogue.

[6] *And Jesus went with them.*
And when he was now not far from the house,
the centurion *sent friends* to him, saying unto him,
Lord, *trouble not thyself:* for I am not worthy
that thou shouldest come under my roof:
[7] *wherefore neither thought I myself worthy*
to come unto thee:
but say the word,
and my servant shall be healed.
[8] For I also am a man *set* under authority,
having under myself soldiers:
and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth;
and to another, Come, and he cometh;
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.
[9] And when Jesus heard *these things,* he marvelled *at him,*
and *turned* and said unto the *multitude* that followed him,
I say unto you,
I have not found so great faith,
no, not in Israel.

[10] And *they that were sent, returning to the house, found* the
servant *whole.*

Matt. viii.

[5] And when he was entered into Capernaum,
there came unto him a centurion,
beseeching him, and saying,
[6] *Lord, my* servant *lieth in the house*
sick *of the palsy, grievously tormented.*

[7] *And he saith unto him,*
I will come and heal him.

[8] And the centurion *answered* and said,
Lord, I am not worthy
that thou shouldest come under my roof:

but *only* say the word,
and my servant shall be healed.
[9] For I also am a man [3] under authority,
having under myself soldiers:
and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth;
and to another, Come, and he cometh;
and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.
[10] And when Jesus heard *it,* he marvelled,
and said to them that followed,
Verily I say unto you,
I have not found so great faith,
no, not in Israel.
[13] *And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way;*
as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee.
And the servant *was healed in that hour.*

§ 131. THE WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN.

Luke vii.

[11] *And it came to pass* [2] *soon afterwards, that he went to*
a city called Nain; and his disciples went with him, and
[12] *a great multitude. | Now when he drew near to the gate of*
the city, behold, there was carried out one that was dead, the
only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much
[13] *people of the city was with her. | And when the Lord saw*
her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep

[1] M. for it had been founded upon the rock. [2] M. on the next day. [3] M. *add* set.

§ 131. THE WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN (*continued*).

Luke vii.

14 *not. | And he came nigh and touched the bier: and the*
bearers stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto
15 *thee, Arise. | And he that was dead sat up, and began to*
16 *speak. And he gave him to his mother. | And fear took hold*
on all: and they glorified God, saying, A great prophet is
17 *arisen among us: and, God hath visited his people. | And*
this report went forth concerning him in the whole of Judæa,
and all the region round about.

§ 132. JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke vii.

18 And *the disciples* of John *told him*
of *all these things.*
19 And John *calling unto him two* of his disciples sent them *to*
the Lord, saying,
Art thou he that cometh,
or look we for another?
20 *And when the men were come unto him, they said, John the*
Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that
21 *cometh, or look we for another? | In that hour he cured*
many of diseases and plagues and evil spirits; and on many
that were blind he bestowed sight.
22 And he answered and said unto them,
Go your way, and tell John
what things ye *have* seen and heard;
'the blind receive their sight,' the lame walk,
the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear,
the dead are raised up,
'the poor have good tidings preached to them.'[a]
23 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find
none occasion of stumbling in me.

24 And when *the messengers of John* were departed,
he began to say unto the multitudes concerning John,
What went ye out into the wilderness to behold?
a reed shaken with the wind?
25 But what went ye out to see?
a man clothed in soft raiment?
Behold, they which *are gorgeously apparelled, and live*
delicately,
are in kings' *courts.*
26 But what went ye out to see? a prophet?
Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.
27 This is he of whom it is written,
'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,
Who shall prepare thy way before thee.'[b]
28 I say unto you,
Among them that are born of women
there *is none* greater than John:
yet he that is but little in the kingdom of *God*
is greater than he.
29 *And all the people when they heard, and the publicans,*
30 *justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. | But*
the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected for themselves the
counsel of God, being not baptized of him.
31 Whereunto then shall I liken *the men* of this generation,
and to what are they like?
32 They are like unto children that sit in the marketplace,
and call one to *another;* which say,
We piped unto you, and ye did not dance;
we wailed, and ye did not *weep.*

Matt. xi.

2 Now when John *heard in the prison*
the works of the Christ,
3 he sent by his disciples, and said unto him,

Art thou he that cometh,
or look we for another?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them,
Go your way and tell John
the things which ye *do* hear and see:
5 'the blind receive their sight,' and the lame walk,
the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear,
and the dead are raised up,
and 'the poor have good tidings preached to them.'[a]
6 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find
none occasion of stumbling in me.

7 And *as these* went their way,
Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John
What went ye out into the wilderness to behold?
a reed shaken with the wind?
8 But what went ye out for to see?
a man clothed in soft raiment?
Behold, they that *wear soft raiment*

are in kings' *houses.*
9 [1] But *wherefore* went ye out? to see a prophet?
Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.
10 This is he, of whom it is written,
'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,
Who shall prepare thy way before thee.'[b]
11 *Verily* I say unto you,
Among them that are born of women
there *hath not arisen* a greater than John *the Baptist:*
yet he that is but little in the kingdom of *heaven*
is greater than he.

16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation?

It is like unto children sitting in the marketplaces,
which call unto *their fellows,* and say,
17 We piped unto you, and ye did not dance;
we wailed, and ye did not *mourn.*

[a] Isa. lxi. 1. [b] Mal. iii. 1.

[1] M. But what went ye out to see? a prophet?

§ 132. JOHN THE BAPTIST (*continued*).

Luke vii.

33 For John *the Baptist* is come eating *no bread* nor drinking *wine;*
and *ye* say, He hath a devil.
34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking;
and *ye* say,
Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber,
a friend of publicans and sinners!
35 And wisdom is justified *of all her children.*

Matt. xi.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking,
and *they* say, He hath a devil.
19 The Son of man came eating and drinking,
and *they* say,
Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber,
a friend of publicans and sinners!
And wisdom is justified *by her* [2] *works.*

§ 133. THE ANOINTING OF JESUS.

Luke vii, viii. [Cf. § 74.]

36 *And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with*
him. And he entered into the Pharisee's house, and sat
37 *down to meat. | And behold, a woman which was in the city,*
a sinner; and when she knew that he was sitting at meat in
the Pharisee's house, she brought an alabaster cruse of oint-
38 *ment, | and standing behind at his feet, weeping, she began*
to wet his feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair
of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the
39 *ointment. | Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him*
saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were
[1] *a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of*
40 *woman this is which toucheth him, that she is a sinner. | And*
Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to
41 *say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. | A certain*
lender had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence,
42 *and the other fifty. | When they had not wherewith to pay,*
he forgave them both. Which of them therefore will love
43 *him most? | Simon answered and said, He, I suppose, to*
whom he forgave the most. And he said unto him, Thou
44 *hast rightly judged. | And turning to the woman, he said*
unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine
house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath
wetted my feet with her tears, and wiped them with her hair. |
45 *Thou gavest me no kiss: but she, since the time I came in,*
46 *hath not ceased to kiss my feet. | My head with oil thou didst*
not anoint: but she hath anointed my feet with ointment. |
47 *Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are*
forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven,
48 *the same loveth little. | And he said unto her, Thy sins are*
49 *forgiven. | And they that sat at meat with him began to say*
50 *within themselves, Who is this that even forgiveth sins? | And*
he said unto the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in
peace.

viii. 1 *And it came to pass soon afterwards, that he went*
about through cities and villages, preaching and bringing
the good tidings of the kingdom of God, and with him the
2 *twelve, | and certain women which had been healed of evil*
spirits and infirmities, Mary that was called Magdalene,
3 *from whom seven devils had gone out, | and Joanna the wife*
of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others,
which ministered unto them of their substance.

§ 134. THE INHOSPITABLE SAMARITANS.

Luke ix.

51 *And it came to pass, when the days were well-nigh come that*
he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to
52 *Jerusalem, | and sent messengers before his face: and they*

[1] M. the prophet. [2] M. children.

§ 134. INHOSPITABLE SAMARITANS (*continued*).

Luke ix.

went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. | *And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he were going to Jerusalem.* | *And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we bid 'fire to come down from heaven, and consume* 56 *them?'*[a1] | *But he turned, and rebuked them.*[2] | *And they went to another village.*

§ 135. INSTANCES OF DISCIPLESHIP.

Luke ix.

And *as they went in the way, a certain man* said unto him,
I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.
And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes,
and the birds of the heaven have nests;
but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.
And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said,
Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.
But he said unto him,
Leave the dead to bury their own dead;
but go thou and publish abroad the kingdom of God.

And another also said, I will follow thee, Lord; but first suffer me to bid farewell to them that are at my house. | *But Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.*

Matt. viii.

18 *Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.*
19 And *there came a scribe*, and said unto him,
Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.
20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes,
and the birds of the heaven have nests;
but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.
21 And another of the disciples said unto him,
Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.
22 But Jesus saith unto him, Follow me;
and leave the dead to bury their own dead.

§ 136. WOE TO UNBELIEVING CITIES.

Luke x.

I say unto you,
It shall be more tolerable in *that* day for Sodom,
than for *that city.*
Woe unto thee, Chorazin!
woe unto thee, Bethsaida!
for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon,
which were done in you,
they would have repented long ago,
sitting in sackcloth and ashes.
Howbeit
it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon
in the judgement, than for you.
And thou, Capernaum,
shalt thou be exalted unto heaven?
thou shalt *be brought* down unto Hades.

He that *heareth* you *heareth* me;
and he that rejecteth you rejecteth me;
and he that *rejecteth* me
rejecteth him that sent me.

Matt. xi.

24 *Howbeit* I say unto you,
that it shall be more tolerable for *the land of* Sodom
in the day *of judgement*, than for *thee.*
21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin!
woe unto thee, Bethsaida!
for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon
which were done in you,
they would have repented long ago
in sackcloth and ashes.
22 Howbeit *I say unto you,*
it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon
in the *day of* judgement, than for you
23 And thou, Capernaum,
shalt thou be exalted unto heaven?
thou shalt *go* down unto Hades:
for if the mighty works had been done in Sodom
which were done in thee,
it would have remained until this day.

Matt. x.

40 He that *receiveth* you *receiveth* me,

and he that *receiveth* me
receiveth him that sent me.

2 Kings i. 10.
M. *add* even as Elijah did.
M. *add* and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. [For the Son of man came not to destroy men's lives, but to save them.]

§ 137. THE RETURN OF THE SEVENTY.

Luke x.

17 *And the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the*
18 *devils are subject unto us in thy name. | And he said unto*
them, I beheld Satan fallen as lightning from heaven. |
19 *Behold, I have given you authority to 'tread upon serpents'*[a]
and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and
20 *nothing shall in any wise hurt you. | Howbeit in this rejoice*
not, that the spirits are subject unto you: but rejoice that
your names are written in heaven.

§ 138. THREE MEDITATIONS.

A.

Luke x.

21 In that *same hour* he *rejoiced in the Holy Spirit*, and said,
I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,
that thou didst hide these things
from the wise and understanding,
and didst reveal them unto babes:
yea, Father; for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.

B.

22 All things have been delivered unto me of my Father:
and no one knoweth *who* the Son *is*, save the Father;
and *who* the Father *is*, save the Son,
and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.

C.

23 *And turning to the disciples, he said privately,*
Blessed are *the* eyes which see *the things that ye see:*

24 for I say unto you,
that many prophets and *kings*
desired to see the things which ye see,
and saw them not;
and to hear the things which ye hear,
and heard them not.

Matt. xi.

25 At that *season* Jesus *answered* and said,
I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth,
that thou didst hide these things
from the wise and understanding,
and didst reveal them unto babes:
26 yea, Father, for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.

27 All things have been delivered unto me of my Father:
and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father;
neither doth any know the Father, save the Son,
and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.

Matt. xiii.

16 *But* blessed are *your* eyes, for they see;
and your ears, for they hear.
17 For *verily* I say unto you,
that many prophets and *righteous men*
desired to see the things which ye see,
and saw them not;
and to hear the things which ye hear,
and heard them not.

§ 139. THE PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN.

Luke x.

29 *But he, desiring to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And*
30 *who is my neighbour? | Jesus made answer and said,*
A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho;
and he fell among robbers, which both stripped him and beat
31 *him, and departed, leaving him half dead. | And by chance*
a certain priest was going down that way: and when he saw
32 *him, he passed by on the other side. | And in like manner*
a Levite also, when he came to the place, and saw him,
33 *passed by on the other side. | But a certain Samaritan, as*
he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he
34 *was moved with compassion, | and came to him, and bound*
up his wounds, pouring on them oil and wine; and he set
him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took
35 *care of him. | And on the morrow he took out two pence, and*
gave them to the host, and said, Take care of him; and
whatsoever thou spendest more, I, when I come back again,
36 *will repay thee. | Which of these three, thinkest thou, proved*
37 *neighbour unto him that fell among the robbers? | And he*
said, He that shewed mercy on him. And Jesus said unto
him, Go, and do thou likewise.

[a] Ps. xci. 13.

§ 140. MARTHA AND MARY.

Luke x.

38 *Now as they went on their way, he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him*
39 *into her house. | And she had a sister called Mary, which*
40 *also sat at the Lord's feet, and heard his word. | But Martha was cumbered about much serving; and she came up to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister did leave*
41 *me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. | But the Lord answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou*
42 *art* [1] *anxious and troubled about many things: |* [2] *but one thing is needful: for Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.*

§ 141. THE LORD'S PRAYER.

Luke xi.

1 *And it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain place, that when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord,*
2 *teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciples. | And he said unto them,*
When ye pray, say,
[3] Father,
Hallowed be thy name.
Thy kingdom come.[4]

3 Give us *day by day* our daily bread.
4 And forgive us our *sins;*
for we *ourselves* also forgive *every one that is* indebted to us.
And bring us not into temptation.[5]

Matt. vi

[9] *After this manner therefore* pray ye:
Our Father *which art in heaven,*
10 Hallowed be thy name.
Thy kingdom come.
Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.
11 Give us *this day* our daily bread.
12 And forgive us our *debts,*
as we also *have* forgiven our debtors.
13 And bring us not into temptation,
but deliver us from [7] *the evil one.*[8]

§ 142. THE IMPORTUNATE FRIEND.

Luke xi.

5 *And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say to him, Friend,*
6 *lend me three loaves; | for a friend of mine is come to me from a journey, and I have nothing to set before him; | and*
7 *he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee? | I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will arise and give him as many as he needeth.*

§ 143. PERSEVERANCE IN PRAYER.

Luke xi.

9 *And I say unto you,* Ask, and it shall be given you;
seek, and ye shall find;
knock, and it shall be opened unto you.
10 For every one that asketh receiveth;
and he that seeketh findeth;
and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
11 And of which of you *that is a father* shall his son ask
[6] a loaf, and he give him a stone?
or a fish, and he *for a fish* give him a serpent?
12 *Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion?*
13 If ye then, being evil,
know how to give good gifts unto your children,
how much more shall your *heavenly* Father
give *the Holy Spirit* to them that ask him?

Matt. vii.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you;
seek, and ye shall find;
knock, and it shall be opened unto you:
8 for every one that asketh receiveth;
and he that seeketh findeth;
and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.
9 Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him for a loaf, will give him a stone;
10 or if he ask for a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then, being evil,
know how to give good gifts unto your children,
how much more shall your Father *which is in heaven*
give *good things* to them that ask him?

[1] M. troubled: Mary hath chosen, &c. [2] M. but few things are needful, or one. [3] M. Our Father, which art in heaven.
[4] M. *add* Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth. [5] M. *add* but deliver us from the evil one (*or* the evil).
[6] M. *omit* a loaf, and he give him a stone? or. [7] M. *or* evil.
[8] M. *add* For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

§ 144. 'THE UNCLEAN SPIRIT.'

Luke xi.

24 The unclean spirit
when he is gone out of the man,
passeth through waterless places, seeking rest;
and finding *none*, he saith,
I will turn back unto my house whence I came out.
25 And when he is come,
he findeth it swept and garnished.
26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him
seven other spirits more evil than himself;
and they enter in and dwell there:
and the last state of that man
becometh worse than the first.

Matt. xii.

43 *But* the unclean spirit,
when he is gone out of the man,
passeth through waterless places, seeking rest,
44 and findeth *it not. Then* he saith,
I will return into my house whence I came out,
and when he is come,
he findeth it *empty*, swept, and garnished.
45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself
seven other spirits more evil than himself,
and they enter in and dwell there:
and the last state of that man
becometh worse than the first.
Even so shall it be also unto this evil generation.

§ 145. TRUE BLESSEDNESS.

Luke xi.

27 *And it came to pass, as he said these things, a certain woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the breasts*
28 *which thou didst suck. | But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.*

[cf. § 22.]

§ 146. 'THIS GENERATION.'

Luke xi.

31 The queen of the south shall rise up
in the judgement with *the men of* this generation,
and shall condemn *them:*
for she came from the ends of the earth
to hear the wisdom of Solomon;
and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.
32 The men of Nineveh shall stand up
in the judgement with this generation,
and shall condemn it:
for they repented at the preaching of Jonah;
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.

Matt. xii.

42 The queen of the south shall rise up
in the judgement with this generation,
and shall condemn *it:*
for she came from the ends of the earth
to hear the wisdom of Solomon;
and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.
41 The men of Nineveh shall stand up
in the judgement with this generation,
and shall condemn it:
for they repented at the preaching of Jonah;
and behold, a greater than Jonah is here.

§ 147. SAYINGS ABOUT A LAMP.

Luke xi.

34 The lamp of *thy* body is *thine* eye:
when thine eye is single,
thy whole body *also is* full of light;
but *when it is* evil,
thy body *also is* full of darkness.
35 *Look therefore whether* the light that is in thee be *not* darkness.
36 *If therefore thy whole body be full of light, having no part dark, it shall be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with its bright shining doth give thee light.*

Matt. vi.

22 The lamp of *the* body is *the* eye:
if therefore thine eye be single,
thy whole body *shall be* full of light.
23 But *if thine eye be* evil,
thy *whole* body *shall be* full of darkness.
If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, *ho*
great is the darkness!

§ 148. WOE TO PHARISEES AND LAWYERS.

A.

Luke xi.

37 *Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to dine with him:*
38 *and he went in, and sat down to meat. | And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed*
39 *before dinner. | And the Lord said unto him,*
Now do ye Pharisees
cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter;
but *your inward part* is full of extortion and *wickedness.*
40 *Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside also?*

Matt. xxiii.

25 *Woe* unto you, *scribes* and Pharisees, *hypocrites!*
for ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter,
but *within they* are full from extortion and *excess.*
26 *Thou blind Pharisee,*

§ 148. WOE TO PHARISEES AND LAWYERS (*continued*).

Luke xi.

41 *Howbeit give for alms those things which are* within;
and behold, all things are clean *unto you.*

42 But woe unto you Pharisees!
for ye tithe mint and *rue and every herb,*
and *pass over*
judgement and *the love of God:*
but these ought ye to have done,
and not to leave the other undone.

43 *Woe unto you Pharisees!*
for ye love the chief seats in the synagogues,
and the salutations in the marketplaces. [cf. xx. 46, § 70.]

44 Woe unto you!
for ye are as the *tombs which appear not,*
and the men that walk over them know it not.

45 *And one of the lawyers answering saith unto him, Master,*
46 *in saying this thou reproachest us also. | And he said, Woe*
unto you lawyers also! for ye lade men with burdens grievous
to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one
of your fingers.

47 Woe unto you!
for ye build the tombs of the prophets,

and your fathers *killed them.*

48 So ye are witnesses *and consent unto the works of your fathers:*
for they killed *them, and ye build their tombs.*

49 Therefore *also said the wisdom of God,* I *will* send unto *them*
prophets
and *apostles;*
and some of them *they* shall kill

and persecute;
50 that the blood of all the *prophets,* which was shed *from*
the foundation of the world,
may be required of *this generation;*
51 from the blood of Abel
unto the blood of Zachariah,
who *perished* between the altar and the sanctuary:
yea, I say unto you,
it shall be required of this generation.

52 Woe unto you *lawyers!*
for ye *took away the key of knowledge:*
ye entered not in yourselves,
and them that were entering in ye *hindered.*

53 *And when he was come out from thence, the scribes and the*
Pharisees began to press upon him vehemently, and to provoke
him to speak of many things; | laying wait for him, to catch
something out of his mouth.

Matt. xxiii.

cleanse first the inside *of the cup and of the platter,*
that the outside thereof may become clean *also.*

23 Woe unto you, *scribes* and Pharisees, *hypocrites!*
for ye tithe mint and *anise and cummin,*
and *have left undone the weightier matters of the law,*
judgement, and *mercy, and faith:*
but these ye ought to have done,
and not to have left the other undone.

6 . . . and love the *chief place at feasts,*
and the chief seats in the synagogues,
7 and the salutations in the marketplaces,

27 Woe unto you, *scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!*
for ye are like unto *whited sepulchres,*

which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of
28 *dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. | Even so ye also*
outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are
full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 Woe unto you, *scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!*
for ye build the *sepulchres* of the prophets,
and garnish the tombs *of the righteous, and say,*
30 *If we had been in the days of our* fathers,
we should not have been partakers with them
in the blood of the prophets.
31 Wherefore ye witness *to yourselves,*
that ye are sons of them that slew *the prophets.*
32 *Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.*
33 *Ye serpents, ye offspring of vipers,*
how shall ye escape the judgement of hell?
34 Therefore, *behold,* I send unto *you* prophets,

and *wise men, and scribes:*
some of them shall *ye* kill *and crucify;*
and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues,
and persecute *from city to city:*
35 that upon *you may come*

all the *righteous* blood shed *on the earth,*
from the blood of Abel *the righteous*
unto the blood of Zachariah *the son of Barachiah,*
whom *ye slew* between the sanctuary and the altar.
36 *Verily* I say unto you,
all these things shall come upon this generation.

13 Woe unto you, *scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!*
because ye *shut the kingdom of heaven against men:*
for ye enter not in yourselves,
neither suffer ye them that are entering in to enter.

§ 149. VARIOUS SAYINGS.

	Luke xii.	Matt. x.
A.		
1	*In the mean time, when the many thousands of the multitude were gathered together, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.*	
B.		
2	*But there is nothing covered up, that shall not be revealed: and hid, that shall not be known.*	
3	*Wherefore* whatsoever *ye have said* in the darkness *shall be heard* in the light; and what ye *have spoken* in the ear *in the inner chambers; shall be* proclaimed upon the housetops.	27 What *I tell you* in the darkness, *speak ye* in the light: and what ye *hear* in the ear, proclaim upon the housetops.
C.		
4	And *I say unto you my friends,* Be not afraid of them which kill the body, *and after that have no more that they can do.*	28 And be not afraid of them which kill the body, *but are not able to kill the soul:*
5	*But I will warn you whom ye shall fear:* Fear him, which *after he hath killed hath power to cast* into hell; *yea, I say unto you, fear him.*	*but rather* fear him which *is able to destroy both soul and body* in hell.
D.		
6	Are not *five* sparrows sold for *two* farthings? and not one of them *is forgotten in the sight of God.*	29 Are not *two* sparrows sold for *a* farthing? and not one of them *shall fall on the ground without your Father:*
7	But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not: ye are of more value than many sparrows.	30 but the very hairs of your head are all numbered. 31 Fear not *therefore;* ye are of more value than many sparrows.
E.		
8	*And I say unto you,* Every one who shall confess me before men, him shall *the Son of man* also confess before *the angels of God:*	32 Every one *therefore* who shall confess me before men, him will *I* also confess before *my Father which is in heaven.*
9	but he that denieth me *in the presence of* men, *shall be* denied *in the presence of the angels of God.*	33 But whosoever shall deny me *before* men, him *will I* also deny *before my Father which is in heaven.*

§ 150. THE PARABLE OF THE RICH FOOL.

Luke xii.

13 *And one out of the multitude said unto him, Master, bid my*
14 *brother divide the inheritance with me. | But he said unto*
15 *him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you? | And he said unto them, Take heed, and keep yourselves from all covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance*
16 *of the things which he possesseth. | And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought*
17 *forth plentifully: | and he reasoned within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have not where to bestow my*
18 *fruits? | And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my*
19 *corn and my goods. | And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease,*
20 *eat, drink, be merry. | But God said unto him, Thou foolish one, this night is thy soul required of thee; and the things*
21 *which thou hast prepared, whose shall they be? | So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.*

§ 151. FAITH IN PROVIDENCE.

	Luke xii.	Matt. vi.
22	*And he said unto his disciples,* Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.	25 Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat, *or what ye shall drink;* nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on.

§ 151. FAITH IN PROVIDENCE (*continued*).

Luke xii.

23 *For* the life *is* more than the food,
and the body than the raiment.
24 *Consider the ravens,*
that they sow not, neither reap;
which have no store-chamber nor barn;
and *God* feedeth them:
of *how* much more value are ye than *the birds!*
25 And which of you by being anxious can
add *a* cubit unto his stature?
26 *If then ye are not able to do even that which is least,*
why are ye anxious concerning *the rest?*
27 Consider the lilies, how they grow:
they toil not, neither do they spin;
yet I say unto you,
Even Solomon in all his glory
was not arrayed like one of these.
28 But if God doth so clothe the grass in the field,
which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven;
how much more shall he clothe you, O ye of little faith?
29 *And seek not ye*
what *ye* shall eat, and what *ye* shall drink,
neither be ye of doubtful mind.
30 For all these things do the *nations of the world* seek after:
but your Father knoweth
that ye have need of these things.
31 Howbeit seek ye [1] his kingdom,
and these things shall be added unto you.

Matt. vi.

Is not the life more than the food,
and the body than the raiment?
26 *Behold the birds of the heaven,*
that they sow not, neither do they reap,
nor *gather into* barns;
and *your heavenly Father* feedeth them.
Are not ye of much more value than *they?*
27 And which of you by being anxious can
add *one* cubit unto his stature?

28 And why are ye anxious concerning *raiment?*
Consider the lilies *of the field,* how they grow;
they toil not, neither do they spin:
29 yet I say unto you, that
even Solomon in all his glory
was not arrayed like one of these.
30 But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field,
which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven,
shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?
31 *Be not therefore anxious, saying,*
What shall *we* eat? or, What shall *we* drink?
or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?
32 For after all these things do the *Gentiles* seek;
for your *heavenly* Father knoweth
that ye have need of *all* these things.
33 But seek ye *first* his kingdom, *and his righteousness;*
and *all* these things shall be added unto you.

§ 152. 'TREASURE IN HEAVEN.'

Luke xii.

32 *Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to*
33 *give you the kingdom. | Sell that ye have, and give alms; make*
for yourselves *purses which wax not old,*
a treasure in the heavens *that faileth not,*
where no thief *draweth near,*
neither moth *destroyeth.*
34 For where *your* treasure is,
there will *your* heart be also.

Matt. vi.

19 *Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where*
moth and rust doth consume, and where thieves break through
and steal:
20 *but lay up* for yourselves treasures in heaven,
where neither moth *nor rust doth consume,*
and where thieves do not *break through nor steal:*
21 for where *thy* treasure is,
there will *thy* heart be also.

§ 153. WATCHFULNESS.

Luke xii.

35 *Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps burning;*
36 *and be ye yourselves like unto men looking for their lord,*
when he shall return from the marriage feast; that, when
he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open unto
37 *him. | Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he*
cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he
shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat, and
38 *shall come and serve them. | And if he shall come in the*
second watch, and if in the third, and find them so, blessed
are those servants.

[Cf. Matt. xxv. 1-13, § 113.]

§ 154. READINESS FOR CHRIST'S COMING.

Luke xii.

39 But know this,
that if the master of the house had known
in what *hour* the thief was coming,
he would have watched,

Matt. xxiv.

43 But know this,
that if the master of the house had known
in what *watch* the thief was coming,
he would have watched,

[1] M. the kingdom of God.

§ 154. READINESS FOR CHRIST'S COMING (*continued*).

Luke xii.

and not have *left*
his house to be broken through.
40 Be ye also ready:
for in an hour that ye think not
the Son of man cometh.
41 *And Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or*
42 *even unto all?* | *And the Lord said,*
Who then is the faithful and wise *steward,*
whom his lord *shall* set over his household,
to give them their *portion* of food in due season?
43 Blessed is that servant,
whom his lord when he cometh
shall find so doing.
44 Of a truth I say unto you,
that he will set him over all that he hath.

45 But if that servant shall say in his heart,
My lord *delayeth his coming;*
and shall begin to beat the *men*servants and the *maid*-servants,
and to eat and drink, *and to be* drunken;
46 the lord of that servant shall come
in a day when he expecteth not,
and in an hour when he knoweth not,
and shall cut him asunder,
and appoint his portion with the *unfaithful.*

47 *And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and made not*
ready, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with
48 *many stripes;* | *but he that knew not, and did things worthy*
of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. And to whomso-
ever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to
whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.

Matt. xxiv.

and would not have *suffered*
his house to be broken through.
44 *Therefore* be ye also ready:
for in an hour that ye think not
the Son of man cometh.

45 Who then is the faithful and wise *servant,*
whom his lord *hath* set over his household,
to give them their food in due season?
46 Blessed is that servant,
whom his lord when he cometh
shall find so doing.
47 Verily I say unto you,
that he will set him over all that he hath.

48 But if that *evil* servant shall say in his heart,
My lord *tarrieth;*
49 and shall begin to beat his *fellow*-servants,

and shall eat and drink *with* the drunken;
50 the lord of that servant shall come
in a day when he expecteth not,
and in an hour when he knoweth not,
51 and shall cut him asunder,
and appoint his portion with the *hypocrites:*
there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

§ 155. RELIGIOUS DIVISIONS.

Luke xii.

49 *I came to cast fire upon the earth; and what will I, if it is*
50 *already kindled?* | *But I have a baptism to be baptized*
with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!
51 Think *ye* that I am come
to *give* peace in the earth?
I tell you, Nay; but rather *division:*
52 *for there shall be from henceforth five in one house divided,*
three against two, and two against three.
53 *They shall be divided, father against son,*
and 'son against father';
mother against daughter,
and 'daughter against her mother';
mother in law against her daughter in law,
and 'daughter in law against her mother in law'.[a]

Matt. x.

34 Think *not* that I came
to *send* peace on the earth:
I came not to send peace, but *a sword.*

35 *For I came to set a man at variance*
'against his father,

and the daughter against her mother,

and the daughter in law against her mother in law:
36 *and a man's foes shall be they of his own household.*'[a]

§ 156. SIGNS OF THE TIMES.

Luke xii.

54 And he said to *the multitudes also,*
When *ye see a cloud rising in the west,*

Matt. xvi.

1 *And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him*
asked him to shew them a sign from heaven.
2 But he *answered* and said unto *them,*
When *it is evening,*

[a] Mic. vii. 6.

§ 156. SIGNS OF THE TIMES (*continued*).

Luke xii.

straightway ye say,
There cometh a shower;
and so it cometh to pass.
55 And *when ye see a south wind blowing,*
ye say, There will be *a scorching heat;*
and it cometh to pass.
56 *Ye hypocrites,* ye know how to *interpret*
the face of *the earth and* the heaven;
but *how is it that* ye *know not*
how to interpret this time?

Matt. xvi.

ye say,
It will be fair weather:
for the heaven is red.
3 And *in the morning,*
It will be *foul weather to-day:*
for the heaven is red and lowring.
Ye know how to *discern*
the face of the heaven;
but ye *cannot*
discern the signs of the times.

§ 157. RECONCILIATION.

Luke xii.

57 *And why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?*
58 For as thou art *going* with thine adversary *before the magistrate,*
on the way *give diligence to be quit* of him;
lest haply *he hale* thee unto the judge,
and the judge shall deliver thee to the officer,
and *the officer shall* cast thee into prison.
59 I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence,
till thou have paid the *very* last *mite.*

Matt. v.

25 *Agree* with thine adversary *quickly,*
whiles thou art with him in the way;
lest haply *the adversary deliver* thee to the judge,
and the judge deliver thee to the officer,
and thou *be* cast into prison.
26 *Verily* I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence,
till thou have paid the last *farthing.*

§ 158. THE GALILAEANS, AND THE TOWER IN SILOAM.

Luke xiii.

1 *Now there were some present at that very season which told*
him of the Galilaeans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with
2 *their sacrifices.* | *And he answered and said unto them,*
Think ye that these Galilaeans were sinners above all the
3 *Galilaeans, because they have suffered these things?* | *I tell*
you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all in like manner
4 *perish.* | *Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam*
fell, and killed them, think ye that they were offenders above
5 *all the men that dwell in Jerusalem?* | *I tell you, Nay: but,*
except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

§ 159. THE PARABLE OF THE FIG TREE.

Luke xiii.

[Cf. § 63.]

6 *And he spake this parable; A certain man had a fig tree*
planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon,
7 *and found none.* | *And he said unto the vine-dresser, Behold,*
these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and
find none: cut it down; why doth it also cumber the ground? |
8 *And he answering saith unto him, Lord, let it alone this*
9 *year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:* | *and if it*
bear fruit thenceforth, well; but if not, thou shalt cut it
down.

§ 160. A WOMAN WITH A SPIRIT OF INFIRMITY.

Luke xiii.

10 *And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath*
11 *day.* | *And behold, a woman which had a spirit of infirmity*
eighteen years; and she was bowed together, and could in no
12 *wise lift herself up.* | *And when Jesus saw her, he called her,*
and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine in-
13 *firmity.* | *And he laid his hands upon her: and immediately*

§ 160. A WOMAN WITH A SPIRIT OF INFIRMITY (*continued*).

Luke xiii.

14 *she was made straight, and glorified God.* | *And the ruler of*
the synagogue, being moved with indignation because Jesus
had healed on the sabbath, answered and said to the multitude,
There are six days in which men ought to work: in them
therefore come and be healed, and not on the day of the sabbath.|
15 *But the Lord answered him, and said, Ye hypocrites, doth not*
each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the
16 *stall, and lead him away to watering?* | *And ought not this*
woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had
bound, lo, these eighteen years, to have been loosed from this
17 *bond on the day of the sabbath?* | *And as he said these things,*
all his adversaries were put to shame: and all the multitude
rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

§ 161. A SAYING ABOUT LEAVEN.

Luke xiii.

20 *And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken*
21 the kingdom of *God?* It is like unto leaven,
which a woman took,
and hid in three measures of meal,
till it was all leavened.

Matt. xiii.

33 *Another parable spake he unto them;*
The kingdom of *heaven* is like unto leaven,
which a woman took,
and hid in three measures of meal,
till it was all leavened.

§ 162. 'THE NARROW DOOR.'

Luke xiii.

22 *And he went on his way through cities and villages, teaching,*
23 *and journeying on unto Jerusalem.* | *And one said unto him,*
Lord, are they few that be saved? And he said unto them,
24 *Strive to* enter in by the narrow *door:*
for many, I say unto you, *shall seek to* enter in, *and shall*
not be able.
25 *When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut*
to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at
the door, saying, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and
say to you, I know not whence ye are;
26 *then shall ye begin* to say,
We did *eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach*
in our streets;

27 and *he shall say, I tell you,*
I know *not whence* ye *are;*
'depart from me, *all* ye workers of iniquity.' [b]

28 There shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth,
when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,
and all the prophets, in the kingdom of *God,*
and *yourselves*
cast forth *without.*
29 And they shall come
from the east and west, *and from the north and south,*
and shall sit down in the kingdom of *God.*
30 *And behold, there are last which shall be first,*
and there are first which shall be last.

Matt. vii.

13 Enter ye in by the narrow *gate:*
for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth t
destruction,
and many be they that enter in thereby.

22 *Many will* say *to me in that day, Lord, Lord,*
did we *not* '*prophesy by thy name*', [a]
and by thy name cast out devils, and by thy name
do many mighty works?
23 And *then will I profess unto them,*
I *never* knew you:
'depart from me, ye that work iniquity.' [b]

Matt. viii.

12b . . . there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.
11b . . . *with* Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,
in the kingdom of *heaven:*
12a but *the sons of the kingdom*
shall be cast forth *into the outer darkness:* . . .
11a And *I say unto you,* that *many* shall come
from the east and the west,
and shall sit down . . . [11b in the kingdom of *heaven:* . .

[a] Jer. xiv. 14. [b] Ps. vi. 8.

§ 163. CHRIST AND HEROD.

Luke xiii.

31 *In that very hour there came certain Pharisees, saying to him, Get thee out, and go hence: for Herod would fain kill*
32 *thee.* | *And he said unto them, Go and say to that fox, Behold, I cast out devils and perform cures to-day and to-*
33 *morrow, and the third day I am perfected.* | *Howbeit I must go on my way to-day and to-morrow and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.*

§ 164. 'O JERUSALEM, JERUSALEM.'

Luke xiii.

34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem,
which killeth the prophets,
and stoneth them that are sent unto her!
how often would I have gathered thy children together,
even as a hen gathereth her *own brood* under her wings,
and ye would not!
35 Behold, 'your house is left unto you desolate:' [a]
and I say unto you,
Ye shall not see me,
until ye shall say,
'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.' [b]

Matt. xxiii.

37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem,
which killeth the prophets,
and stoneth them that are sent unto her!
how often would I have gathered thy children together,
even as a hen gathereth her *chickens* under her wings,
and ye would not!
38 Behold, 'your house is left unto you desolate.' [a]
39 For I say unto you,
Ye shall not see me *henceforth*,
till ye shall say,
'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.' [b]

§ 165. A MAN WITH DROPSY.

Luke xiv.

1 *And it came to pass, when he went into the house of one of the rulers of the Pharisees on a sabbath to eat bread, that*
2 *they were watching him.* | *And behold, there was before him*
3 *a certain man which had the dropsy.* | *And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to*
4 *heal on the sabbath, or not?* | *But they held their peace. And*
5 *he took him, and healed him, and let him go.* | *And he said unto them, Which of you shall have* [1] *an ass or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw him up on a sabbath*
6 *day?* | *And they could not answer again unto these things.*

§ 166. HUMILITY AND HOSPITALITY.

Luke xiv.

7 *And he spake a parable unto those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief seats; saying unto*
8 *them,* | *When thou art bidden of any man to a marriage feast, sit not down in the chief seat; lest haply a more*
9 *honourable man than thou be bidden of him,* | *and he that bade thee and him shall come and say to thee, Give this man place; and then thou shalt begin with shame to take the*
10 *lowest place.* | *But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest place; that when he that hath bidden thee cometh, he may say to thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have glory in the presence of all that sit at meat with thee.* |
11 *For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.*

12 *And he said to him also that had bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, nor thy kinsmen, nor rich neighbours; lest haply they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee.* |
13 *But when thou makest a feast, bid the poor, the maimed, the*
14 *lame, the blind:* | *and thou shalt be blessed; because they have not wherewith to recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed in the resurrection of the just.*

[a] Jer. xxii. 5. [b] Ps. cxviii. 26.
[1] M. a son.

§ 167. THE PARABLE OF THE MARRIAGE FEAST.

Luke xiv.

15 *And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.*
16 But he said unto *him,*

A certain *man*
made *a great supper; and he bade many:*
17 and he sent forth his servant *at supper time*
to *say* to them that were bidden,
Come; for all things are now ready.
18 And they *all with one consent began to make excuse.*
The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must
19 *needs go out and see it: I pray thee have me excused. | And*
another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to
20 *prove them: I pray thee have me excused. | And another*
said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. |
21 *And the servant came, and told his lord these things.*

Then the *master of the house being angry*

said to his servant,

Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and
bring in hither the poor and maimed and blind and lame. |
22 *And the servant said, Lord, what thou didst command is*
23 *done, and yet there is room. | And the lord said unto the*
servant,
Go out into the highways *and hedges,*
and *constrain them to come in,*

that my house may be filled.
24 *For I say unto you, that none of those men which were*
bidden shall taste of my supper.

Matt. xxii.

1 And Jesus *answered and spake again*
in parables unto *them,* saying,
2 *The kingdom of heaven is likened unto* a certain *king,*
which made *a marriage feast for his son,*
3 and sent forth his servants
to *call* them that were bidden to *the marriage feast:*

and they *would not come.*

4 *Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them tha*
are bidden, Behold, I have made ready my dinner: my oxe
and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come t
5 *the marriage feast. | But they made light of it, and wen*
their ways, one to his own farm, another to his merchandise:
6 *and the rest laid hold on his servants, and entreated ther*
shamefully, and killed them.
7 But the *king was wroth;*
and he sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, an
burned their city.
8 *Then* saith he to his servants,
The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were no
worthy.

9 Go ye *therefore* unto *the partings of* the highways,
and *as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage feast.*
10 *And those servants went out into the highways, and gathere*
together all as many as they found, both bad and good:
and the wedding was filled *with guests.*

11 *But when the king came in to behold the guests, he sa*
12 *there a man which had not on a wedding-garment: | and h*
saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not havin
13 *a wedding-garment? And he was speechless. | Then the kin*
said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast hi
out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping an
14 *gnashing of teeth. | For many are called, but few chosen.*

§ 168. DISCIPLESHIP.

Luke xiv.

25 *Now there went with him great multitudes:*
and he turned, and said unto them,
26 *If any man cometh unto me,*
and hateth not his own father, and mother,
and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters,
yea, and his own life also,
he cannot be my disciple.
27 *Whosoever doth not bear his own cross,*
and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

Matt. x.

37 *He that loveth* father or mother *more than me*
is not worthy of me;
and he that loveth son or daughter more than me
is not worthy of me.

§ 169. COUNTING THE COST.

Luke xiv.

28 *For which of you, desiring to build a tower, doth not first sit*
down and count the cost, whether he have wherewith to
29 *complete it? | Lest haply, when he hath laid a foundation,*
and is not able to finish, all that behold begin to mock him,
30 *saying, | This man began to build, and was not able to*
31 *finish. | Or what king, as he goeth to encounter another king*
in war, will not sit down first and take counsel whether he is
able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him
32 *with twenty thousand? | Or else, while the other is yet a*
great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and asketh conditions
33 *of peace. | So therefore whosoever he be of you that renounceth*
not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

§ 170. THE LOST SHEEP.

Luke xv. **Matt. xviii.**

1 *Now all the publicans and sinners were drawing near unto*
2 *him for to hear him. | And both the Pharisees and the scribes*
murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth
with them.

3 *And he spake unto them this parable, saying,*

4 What man *of you*, having a hundred sheep,
and *having lost* one of them,
doth not leave the ninety and nine
in the wilderness,
and *go after* that which *is lost, until he find it?*

5 And *when* he hath found it,

he *layeth it on his shoulders*, rejoicing.

6 *And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends*
and his neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me, for
7 *I have found my sheep which was lost. | I say unto you, that*
even so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that
repenteth,
more than over ninety and nine *righteous persons*,
which *need no repentance.*

12 *How think ye?*
if any man have a hundred sheep,
and one of them *be gone astray*,
doth he not leave the ninety and nine,
and go unto the mountains,
and *seek* that which *goeth astray?*

13 And *if so be that* he find it,
verily I say unto you,
he rejoiceth over it

more than over *the* ninety and nine
which *have not gone astray.*

§ 171. THE LOST COIN.

Luke xv.

8 *Or what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one*
piece, doth not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and seek
9 *diligently until she find it? | And when she hath found it,*
she calleth together her friends and neighbours, saying,
Rejoice with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost. |
10 *Even so, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the*
angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

§ 172. THE PARABLE OF THE PRODIGAL SON.

Luke xv.

11, 12 *And he said, A certain man had two sons: | and the younger*
of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of thy
substance that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his
13 *living. | And not many days after the younger son gathered*
all together, and took his journey into a far country; and
14 *there he wasted his substance with riotous living. | And when*
he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that country;
15 *and he began to be in want. | And he went and joined himself*
to one of the citizens of that country; and he sent him into
16 *his fields to feed swine. | And he would fain have been filled*
with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto
17 *him. | But when he came to himself he said, How many hired*

§ 172. THE PARABLE OF THE PRODIGAL SON (*continued*).

Luke xv.

servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and
18 *I perish here with hunger! | I will arise and go to my father,*
and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven,
19 *and in thy sight: | I am no more worthy to be called thy*
20 *son: make me as one of thy hired servants. | And he arose,*
and came to his father. But while he was yet afar off, his
father saw him, and was moved with compassion, and ran,
21 *and fell on his neck, and kissed him. | And the son said*
unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy
22 *sight: I am no more worthy to be called thy son. | But the*
father said to his servants, Bring forth quickly the best robe,
and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes
23 *on his feet: | and bring the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us*
24 *eat, and make merry: | for this my son was dead, and is*
alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to
25 *be merry. | Now his elder son was in the field: and as he*
came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and
26 *dancing. | And he called to him one of the servants, and*
27 *inquired what these things might be. | And he said unto him,*
Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted
28 *calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. | But he*
was angry, and would not go in: and his father came out,
29 *and intreated him. | But he answered and said to his father,*
Lo, these many years do I serve thee, and I never transgressed
a commandment of thine: and yet thou never gavest me
30 *a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: | but when*
this thy son came, which hath devoured thy living with
31 *harlots, thou killedst for him the fatted calf. | And he said*
unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that is mine is
32 *thine. | But it was meet to make merry and be glad: for this*
thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and
is found.

§ 173. THE PARABLE OF THE UNJUST STEWARD.

Luke xvi.

1 *And he said also unto the disciples, There was a certain*
rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused
2 *unto him that he was wasting his goods. | And he called him,*
and said unto him, What is this that I hear of thee? render
the account of thy stewardship; for thou canst be no longer
3 *steward. | And the steward said within himself, What shall*
I do, seeing that my lord taketh away the stewardship from
4 *me? I have not strength to dig; to beg I am ashamed. | I am*
resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the steward-
5 *ship, they may receive me into their houses. | And calling to*
him each one of his lord's debtors, he said to the first, How
6 *much owest thou unto my lord? | And he said, A hundred*
measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bond,
7 *and sit down quickly and write fifty. | Then said he to*
another, And how much owest thou? And he said, A hun-
dred measures of wheat. He saith unto him, Take thy
8 *bond, and write fourscore. | And his lord commended the*
unrighteous steward because he had done wisely: for the
sons of this world are for their own generation wiser than the
9 *sons of the light. | And I say unto you, Make to yourselves*
friends by means of the mammon of unrighteousness; that,
when it shall fail, they may receive you into the eternal
10 *tabernacles. | He that is faithful in a very little is faithful*
also in much: and he that is unrighteous in a very little is
11 *unrighteous also in much. | If therefore ye have not been*
faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to
12 *your trust the true riches? | And if ye have not been faithful*
in that which is another's, who will give you that which is
your own?

§ 174. FOUR SAYINGS.

Luke xvi.

13 No *servant* can serve two masters:
for either he will hate the one, and love the other;
or else he will hold to one, and despise the other.
Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

14 *And the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, heard all*
15 *these things; and they scoffed at him. | And he said unto them, Ye are they that justify yourselves in the sight of men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is exalted among men is an abomination in the sight of God.*

16 The law and the prophets
were until John:
from *that time*
the *gospel* of the kingdom of *God is preached*,
and *every man entereth violently into* it.

17 *But it is easier*
for heaven and earth *to* pass away,
than for one tittle of the law to *fall*.

Matt. vi.

24 No *man* can serve two masters:
for either he will hate the one, and love the other;
or else he will hold to one, and despise the other.
Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

Luke xvi.

13 For *all* the prophets and the law
prophesied until John.
12 And from *the days of John the Baptist until now*
the kingdom of *heaven suffereth violence*,
and *men of violence take* it *by force*.

Matt. v.

18 *For verily I say unto you,*
Till heaven and earth pass away,
one jot or one tittle shall *in no wise pass away* from the law.

§ 175. THE PARABLE OF DIVES AND LAZARUS.

Luke xvi.

19 *Now there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in*
20 *purple and fine linen, faring sumptuously every day: | and a certain beggar named Lazarus was laid at his gate, full of*
21 *sores, | and desiring to be fed with the crumbs that fell from the rich man's table; yea, even the dogs came and licked his*
22 *sores. | And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and that he was carried away by the angels into Abraham's bosom:*
23 *and the rich man also died, and was buried. | And in Hades he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham*
24 *afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. | And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue;*
25 *for I am in anguish in this flame. | But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and Lazarus in like manner evil things: but now*
26 *here he is comforted, and thou art in anguish. | And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, that they which would pass from hence to you may not be able,*
27 *and that none may cross over from thence to us. | And he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to*
28 *my father's house; | for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of*
29 *torment. | But Abraham saith, They have Moses and the*
30 *prophets; let them hear them. | And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one go to them from the dead, they will*
31 *repent. | And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, if one rise from the dead.*

§ 176. ON THE TREATMENT OF OFFENCES.

Luke xvii.

3 *Take heed to yourselves:* if thy brother sin,
rebuke him;
and if he *repent*, *forgive him.*

4 *And if he* sin against thee seven times *in the day,*
and seven times turn again to thee, saying, I repent;
thou shalt forgive him.

Matt. xviii.

15 And if thy brother sin *against thee,*
go, shew him his fault between thee and him alone,
if he *hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.*
21 *Then came Peter, and said to him,*
Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me,
and I forgive him? until seven times?

§ 177. 'UNPROFITABLE SERVANTS.'

Luke xvii.

7 *But who is there of you, having a servant plowing or*
keeping sheep, that will say unto him, when he is come in
8 *from the field, Come straightway and sit down to meat; | and*
will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may
sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and
9 *drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? | Doth*
he thank the servant because he did the things that were
10 *commanded? | Even so ye also, when ye shall have done all*
the things that are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable
servants; we have done that which it was our duty to do.

§ 178. THE TEN LEPERS.

Luke xvii.

11 *And it came to pass, as they were on the way to Jerusalem,*
that he was passing through the midst of Samaria and
12 *Galilee. | And as he entered into a certain village, there met*
13 *him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: | and*
they lifted up their voices, saying, Jesus, Master, have mercy
14 *on us. | And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go and*
'shew yourselves unto the priests'.[a] *And it came to pass, as*
15 *they went, they were cleansed. | And one of them, when he*
saw that he was healed, turned back, with a loud voice
16 *glorifying God; | and he fell upon his face at his feet, giving*
17 *him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. | And Jesus answering*
said, Were not the ten cleansed? but where are the nine? |
18 *Were there none found that returned to give glory to God,*
19 *save this stranger? | And he said unto him, Arise, and go*
thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

§ 179. 'ONE TAKEN, ANOTHER LEFT.'

Luke xvii.

34 *I say unto you, In that night there shall be two men on one*
bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. |
35 *There shall be two women grinding together; the one shall be*
37 *taken, and the other shall be left.*[1] *| And they answering say*
unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Where
the body is, thither will the eagles also be gathered together.

§ 180. THE PARABLE OF THE JUDGE AND THE WIDOW.

Luke xviii.

1 *And he spake a parable unto them to the end that they*
2 *ought always to pray, and not to faint; | saying, There was*
in a city a judge, which feared not God, and regarded not
3 *man: | and there was a widow in that city; and she came*
4 *oft unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. | And*
he would not for a while: but afterward he said within
5 *himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; | yet*
because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest she
6 *wear me out by her continual coming. | And the Lord said,*
7 *Hear what the unrighteous judge saith. | And shall not God*
avenge his elect, which cry to him day and night, and he is
8 *longsuffering over them? | I say unto you, that he will*
avenge them speedily. Howbeit when the Son of man cometh,
shall he find faith on the earth?

[a] Lev. xiii. 49.

[1] M. *add* 36 There shall be two men in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.

§ 181. THE PARABLE OF THE PHARISEE AND THE PUBLICAN.

Luke xviii.

9 *And he spake also this parable unto certain which trusted*
in themselves that they were righteous, and set all others at
10 *nought: | Two men went up into the temple to pray; the*
11 *one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. | The Pharisee*
stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that
I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unjust, adulterers,
12 *or even as this publican. | I fast twice in the week; I give*
13 *tithes of all that I get. | But the publican, standing afar off,*
would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote
14 *his breast, saying, God, be merciful to me a sinner. | I say*
unto you, This man went down to his house justified rather
than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be
humbled; but he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

§ 182. ZACCHAEUS.

Luke xix.

1, 2 *And he entered and was passing through Jericho. | And*
behold, a man called by name Zacchaeus; and he was a chief
3 *publican, and he was rich. | And he sought to see Jesus who*
he was; and could not for the crowd, because he was little
4 *of stature. | And he ran on before, and climbed up into*
a sycomore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. |
5 *And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and said*
unto him, Zacchaeus, make haste, and come down; for
6 *to-day I must abide at thy house. | And he made haste, and*
7 *came down, and received him joyfully. | And when they saw*
it, they all murmured, saying, He is gone in to lodge with
8 *a man that is a sinner. | And Zacchaeus stood, and said*
unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to
the poor; and if I have wrongfully exacted aught of any
9 *man, I restore fourfold. | And Jesus said unto him, To-day*
is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is a son
10 *of Abraham. | For the Son of man came 'to seek' and to save*
'that which was lost'.[a]

§ 183. THE PARABLE OF THE POUNDS.

Luke xix.

11 *And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable,*
because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they supposed
12 *that the kingdom of God was immediately to appear. | He*
said therefore,
A certain *nobleman*
went into *a far* country,
to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.
13 And he called *ten* servants of his,
and gave them *ten pounds,*
and said unto them, Trade ye herewith till I come.

14 *But his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him,*
saying, We will not that this man reign over us.

Matt. xxv.

14 *For it is as when* a man,
going into *another* country,

called his own servants,
and delivered unto them *his goods.*
15 *And unto one he gave five talents,*
to another two, to another one;
to each according to his several ability;
and he went on his journey.

16 *Straightway he that received the five talents went and traded*
17 *with them, and made other five talents. | In like manner he*
18 *also that received the two gained other two. | But he that*
received the one went away and digged in the earth, and hid
his lord's money.

[a] Ezek. xxxiv. 16.

§ 183. THE PARABLE OF THE POUNDS (*continued*).

Luke xix.

15 And *it came to pass,*
when he was come *back again, having received the kingdom,*
that he commanded these servants,
unto whom he had given the money,
to be called to him, that he might know what they had gained by trading.
16 And *the first* came before him,
saying,
Lord, *thy pound*
hath made ten pounds more.
17 And *he* said unto him,
Well done, thou good servant:
because thou *wast found* faithful in a *very little,*
have thou authority over *ten cities.*

18 And *the second* came, saying,
Thy pound, Lord,
hath made five pounds.
19 And *he* said unto him *also,*

Be thou *also* over *five cities.*

20 And *another* came, saying, Lord,

behold, *here is* thy *pound,*
which I *kept laid up* in *a napkin:*
21 for I feared thee,
because thou art an *austere* man:
thou *takest up* that thou *layedst not down,*
and reapest that thou didst not sow.
22 He saith unto him, *Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee,*
thou wicked servant.
Thou knewest that I *am an austere man,*
taking up that I *laid not down,*
and reaping that I did not sow;
23 then wherefore *gavest* thou not my money into the bank,
and I at my coming should have received
it with interest?
24 *And he said unto them that stood by,*
Take away from him *the pound,*
and give it unto him that hath the ten *pounds.*
25 *And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.*
26 I *say unto you,* that unto every one that hath shall be given;

but from him that hath not,
even that which he hath shall be taken away from him.
27 *Howbeit these mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.*

Matt. xxv.

19 Now *after a long time*
the lord of those servants cometh,

and maketh a reckoning with them.

20 And *he that received the five talents* came
and brought other five talents, saying,
Lord, *thou deliveredst unto me five talents:*
lo, I have gained other five talents.
21 *His lord* said unto him,
Well done, good *and faithful* servant:
thou *hast been* faithful over a *few things,*
I will set thee over *many things:*
enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
22 And *he also that received the two talents* came and said,
Lord, *thou deliveredst unto me two talents:*
lo, I have gained other two talents.
23 *His lord* said unto him,
Well done, good and faithful servant;
thou hast been faithful over a few things,
I will set thee over *many things:*
enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
24a And *he also that had received the one talent* came and said,
Lord,
25b and *hid thy talent* in *the earth:*
lo, *thou hast* thine *own.*
25a and I was afraid, *and went away*
24b *I knew* thee that thou art a *hard* man,
reaping where thou didst not sow,
and *gathering where* thou *didst not scatter:*
26 But *his lord answered* and said unto him,
Thou wicked *and slothful* servant,
thou knewest that I reap *where* I sowed not,

and *gather* where I *did not scatter;*
27 thou *oughtest* therefore to have *put* my money to the bankers,
and at my coming I should have received *back*
mine own with interest.

28 Take ye away *therefore the talent* from him,
and give it unto him that hath the ten *talents.*

29 For unto every one that hath shall be given,
and he shall have abundance:
but from him that hath not,
even that which he hath shall be taken away.
30 *And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness:* [*there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.*]

§ 184. THE PROMISE OF THE KINGDOM.

Luke xxii.

28 *But ye are they which have continued with me in my tempta-*
29 *tions;* | *and I appoint unto you a kingdom, even as my*
30 *Father appointed unto me,* | *that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom;*
and ye shall sit on thrones
judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Matt. xix.

28 . . . *Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory,*

ye *also* shall sit upon *twelve* thrones,
judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

§ 185. CHANGE OF METHODS.

Luke xxii.

35 *And he said unto them, When I sent you forth without*
purse, and wallet, and shoes, lacked ye anything? And they
36 *said, Nothing. | And he said unto them, But now, he that*
hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise a wallet: and he
37 *that hath none, let him sell his cloke, and buy a sword. | For*
I say unto you, that this which is written must be fulfilled in
me, 'And he was reckoned with transgressors':[a] for that which
38 *concerneth me hath fulfilment. | And they said, Lord, behold,*
here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

§ 186. JESUS BEFORE HEROD.

Luke xxiii.

4 *And Pilate said unto the chief priests and the multitudes,*
5 *I find no fault in this man. | But they were the more urgent,*
saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all
Judaea, and beginning from Galilee even unto this place. |
6 *But when Pilate heard it, he asked whether the man were*
7 *a Galilaean. | And when he knew that he was of Herod's*
jurisdiction, he sent him unto Herod, who himself also was
at Jerusalem in these days.
8 *Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he*
was of a long time desirous to see him, because he had heard
concerning him; and he hoped to see some miracle done by
9 *him. | And he questioned him in many words; but he*
10 *answered him nothing. | And the chief priests and the scribes*
11 *stood, vehemently accusing him. | And Herod with his soldiers*
set him at nought, and mocked him, and arraying him in
12 *gorgeous apparel sent him back to Pilate. | And Herod and*
Pilate became friends with each other that very day: for
before they were at enmity between themselves.

§ 187. THE SECOND TRIAL BEFORE PILATE.

Luke xxiii.

[Cf. § 82.]

13 *And Pilate called together the chief priests and the rulers*
14 *and the people, and said unto them, | Ye brought unto me*
this man, as one that perverteth the people: and behold,
I, having examined him before you, found no fault in this
15 *man touching those things whereof ye accuse him: | no, nor*
yet Herod: for he sent him back unto us; and behold,
16 *nothing worthy of death hath been done by him. | I will*
18 *therefore chastise him, and release him. | But they cried out*
all together, saying, Away with this man, and release unto
19 *us Barabbas: | one who for a certain insurrection made in*
the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.

§ 188. 'DAUGHTERS OF JERUSALEM.'

Luke xxiii.

27 *And there followed him a great multitude of the people, and*
28 *of women who bewailed and lamented him. | But Jesus*
turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not
for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. |
29 *For behold, the days are coming, in which they shall say,*
Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and
30 *the breasts that never gave suck. | Then shall they begin to*
say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover
31 *us. | For if they do these things in the green tree, what shall*
be done in the dry?
32 *And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him*
to be put to death.

[a] Isa. liii. 12.

§ 189. THE APPEARANCE ON THE WAY TO EMMAUS.

Luke xxiv.

13 *And behold, two of them were going that very day to*
a village named Emmaus, which was threescore furlongs
14 *from Jerusalem.* | *And they communed with each other of all*
15 *these things which had happened.* | *And it came to pass,*
while they communed and questioned together, that Jesus
16 *himself drew near, and went with them.* | *But their eyes*
17 *were holden that they should not know him.* | *And he said*
unto them, What communications are these that ye have one
with another, as ye walk? And they stood still, looking
18 *sad.* | *And one of them, named Cleopas, answering said unto*
him, Dost thou alone sojourn in Jerusalem and not know
19 *the things which are come to pass there in these days?* | *And*
he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him,
The things concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet
mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: |
20 *and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to*
21 *be condemned to death, and crucified him.* | *But we hoped*
that it was he which should redeem Israel. Yea and beside
all this, it is now the third day since these things came to
22 *pass.* | *Moreover certain women of our company amazed us,*
23 *having been early at the tomb;* | *and when they found not*
his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision
24 *of angels, which said that he was alive.* | *And certain of them*
that were with us went to the tomb, and found it even so as
25 *the women had said: but him they saw not.* | *And he said*
unto them, O foolish men, and slow of heart to believe in all
26 *that the prophets have spoken!* | *Behoved it not the Christ to*
27 *suffer these things, and to enter into his glory?* | *And begin-*
ning from Moses and from all the prophets, he interpreted
to them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. |
28 *And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they were*
29 *going: and he made as though he would go further.* | *And*
they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward
evening, and the day is now far spent. And he went in to
30 *abide with them.* | *And it came to pass, when he had sat*
down with them to meat, he took the bread, and blessed it,
31 *and brake, and gave to them.* | *And their eyes were opened,*
and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. |
32 *And they said one to another, Was not our heart burning*
within us, while he spake to us in the way, while he opened
33 *to us the scriptures?* | *And they rose up that very hour, and*
returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together,
34 *and them that were with them,* | *saying, The Lord is risen*
35 *indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.* | *And they rehearsed*
the things that happened in the way, and how he was known
of them in the breaking of the bread.

§ 190. AN APPEARANCE TO THE APOSTLES.

Luke xxiv.

36 *And as they spake these things, he himself stood in the*
midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. |
37 *But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that*
38 *they beheld a spirit.* | *And he said unto them, Why are ye*
troubled? and wherefore do reasonings arise in your heart? |
39 *See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me,*
and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye behold
40 *me having.* | *And when he had said this, he shewed them his*
41 *hands and his feet.* | *And while they still disbelieved for joy,*
and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here anything
42 *to eat?* | *And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish.* |
43 *And he took it, and did eat before them.*

§ 191. JESUS' LAST WORDS.

Luke xxiv.

44 *And he said unto them, These are my words which I spake*
unto you, while I was yet with you, how that all things must
needs be fulfilled, which are written in the law of Moses, and
45 *the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me.* | *Then opened*
he their mind, that they might understand the scriptures; |
46 *and he said unto them, Thus it is written, that the Christ*
should suffer, and rise again from the dead the third day; |
47 *and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in*
48 *his name unto all the nations, beginning from Jerusalem.* | *Ye*
49 *are witnesses of these things.* | *And behold, I send forth the*
promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city,
until ye be clothed with power from on high.

§ 192. THE ASCENSION.

Luke xxiv.

50 *And he led them out until they were over against Bethany:*
51 *and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.* | *And it came*
to pass, while he blessed them, he parted from them, and was
52 *carried up into heaven.* | *And they worshipped him, and*
53 *returned to Jerusalem with great joy:* | *and were continually*
in the temple, blessing God.

OXFORD BOOKS

NOUUM TESTAMENTUM LATINE

Secundum editionem Sancti Hieronymi. Edited by JOHN WORDSWORTH, H. J. WHITE, H. F. D. SPARKS, C. JENKINS, and A. W. ADAMS.

2.7. Hebrews. 20*s*. net.
3.1. Acts. 50*s*.
3.2. Epistle of James (H. F. D. SPARKS); Epistles of Peter (H. F. D. SPARKS); Epistles of John (A. W. ADAMS); Epistle of Jude (H. F. D. SPARKS). 50*s*. net
3.3. Apocalypse. (H. F. D. SPARKS.) 50*s*. net.

Part 3, complete £6. 6*s*. net.

THE APOCRYPHAL NEW TESTAMENT

Being the Apocryphal Gospels, Acts, Epistles, and Apocalypses, with other narratives and fragments. Newly translated by M. R. JAMES. 25*s*. net

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF THE NEW TESTAMENT

By A. H. MCNEILE. Second edition revised by C. S. C. WILLIAMS, 1955. 45*s*. net

THE ORIGINS OF THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MATTHEW

By G. D. KILPATRICK. 25*s*. net

THE GOSPEL MESSAGE OF ST. MARK

By R. H. LIGHTFOOT. 18*s*. net

THE EPISTLE TO THE EPHESIANS. Its Authorship, Origin, and Purpose

By C. LESLIE MITTON. 38*s*. net

NOUUM TESTAMENTUM GRAECE

Secundum Textum Westcotto-Hortianum. Edited by S. C. E. LEGG.

St. Mark 40*s*. net

'An admirably printed, admirably arranged book, with an *Apparatus*, so far as we have been able to test it, of great accuracy. . . . Clearly Tischendorf is no longer sufficient, and we need an edition which will take its place. That we have in the new Oxford St. Mark.'—*Times Literary Supplement.*

St. Matthew 45*s*. net

'The Gospel of Matthew was copied probably more than any other in the early centuries, and was most prone to assimilation and corruption; the critical edition of its text is a formidable undertaking, for which one can have nothing but praise. . . . This is another contribution of English scholarship to the textual criticism of the New Testament.'—*Guardian.*

(All prices are operative in the United Kingdom only and are subject to alteration without notice)

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

[3/62]

KQ-655-442